





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation

<https://archive.org/details/theplantersofcol0000unse>

G.M. Elliott Library  
Cincinnati Bible College & Seminary  
2700 Glenway Avenue  
P.O. Box 04320  
Cincinnati, Ohio 45204-3200



*The Planters of Colonial Virginia*



# *The* PLANTERS OF COLONIAL VIRGINIA

By THOMAS J. WERTENBAKER



G.M. ELLIOTT LIBRARY  
Cincinnati Bible College & Seminary

*New York*  
RUSSELL & RUSSELL

975.02

W 4 99c

COPYRIGHT 1922 BY PRINCETON UNIVERSITY PRESS

COPYRIGHT 1958, 1959 BY THOMAS J. WERTENBAKER

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CATALOG CARD NUMBER 59-11228

4  
1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9

28205

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

## PREFACE

America since the days of Captain John Smith has been the land of hope for multitudes in Europe. In many an humble home, perhaps in some English village, or an Ulster farm, or in the Rhine valley, one might find a family assembled for the reading of a letter from son, or brother, or friend, who had made the great venture of going to the New World. "Land is abundant here and cheap," the letter would state. "Wages are high, food is plentiful, farmers live better than lords. If one will work only five days a week one can live grandly."

In pamphlets intended to encourage immigration the opportunities for advancement were set forth in glowing colors. In Virginia alone, it was stated, in 1649, there were "of kine, oxen, bulls, calves, twenty thousand, large and good." When the traveller Welby came to America he was surprised to "see no misery, no disgusting army of paupers, not even beggars; while Henry B. Fearson noted that laborers were "more erect in their posture, less careworn in their countenances" than those of Europe.

In Virginia, as in other colonies, it was the cheapness of land and the dearness of labor which gave the newcomer his chance to rise. The rich man might possess many thousands of acres, but they would profit him nothing unless he could find the labor to put them under cultivation. Indentured workers met his needs in part, but they were expensive, hard to acquire, and served for only four years. If he hired freemen he

would have to pay wages which in England would have seemed fantastic.

Thus the so-called servants who had completed their terms and men who had come over as freemen found it easy to earn enough to buy small plantations of their own. That thousands did so is shown by the Rent Roll which is published as an appendix to this book. One has only to glance at it to see that the large plantations are vastly outnumbered by the small farms of the yeomen. It proves that Virginia at the beginning of the eighteenth century was not the land of huge estates, worked by servants and slaves, but of a numerous, prosperous middle class.

Owning plantations of from fifty to five hundred acres, cultivating their fields of tobacco, their patches of Indian corn and wheat, their vegetable gardens and orchards with their own labor or the labor of their sons, the yeomen enjoyed a sense of independence and dignity. It was their votes which determined the character of the Assembly, it was they who resisted most strongly all assaults upon the liberties of the people.

As the small farmer, after the day's work was over, sat before his cottage smoking his long clay pipe, he could reflect that for him the country had fulfilled its promise. The land around him was his own; his tobacco brought in enough for him to purchase clothes, farm implements, and household goods.

But he frowned as he thought of the slave ship which had come into the nearby river, and landed a group of Negroes who were all bought by his wealthy neighbors. If Virginia were flooded with slaves, would it not cheapen production

and lower the price of tobacco? Could he and his sons, when they hoed their fields with their own hands, compete with slave labor?

The event fully justified these fears. The yeoman class in Virginia was doomed. In the face of the oncoming tide they had three alternatives—to save enough money to buy a slave or two, to leave the country, or to sink into poverty.

It was the acquiring of a few slaves by the small planter which saved the middle class. Before the end of the colonial period a full fifty per cent. of the slaveholders had from one to five only. Seventy-five per cent. had less than ten. The small farmer, as he led his newly acquired slaves from the auction block to his plantation may have regretted that self-preservation had forced him to depend on their labor rather than his own. But he could see all around him the fate of those who had no slaves, as they became "poor white trash." And he must have looked on with pity as a neighbor gathered up his meager belongings and, deserting his little plantation, set out for the remote frontier.

It was one of the great crimes of history, this undermining of the yeoman class by the importation of slaves. The wrong done to the Negro himself has been universally condemned; the wrong done the white man has attracted less attention. It effectively deprived him of his American birthright—the high return for his labor. It transformed Virginia and the South from a land of hard working, self-respecting, independent yeomen, to a land of slaves and slaveholders.

*Princeton, New Jersey  
August, 1957*

THOMAS J. WERTENBAKER



## CONTENTS

---

CHAPTER I: ENGLAND IN THE NEW WORLD	7
CHAPTER II: THE INDIAN WEED	21
CHAPTER III: THE VIRGINIA YEOMANRY	38
CHAPTER IV: FREEMEN AND FREEDMEN	60
CHAPTER V: THE RESTORATION PERIOD	84
CHAPTER VI: THE YEOMAN IN VIRGINIA HISTORY	101
CHAPTER VII: WORLD TRADE	115
CHAPTER VIII: BENEATH THE BLACK TIDE	134
NOTES TO CHAPTERS	162
APPENDIX	181
INDEX	249





## *CHAPTER I*

### ENGLAND IN THE NEW WORLD

AT the beginning of the Seventeenth century colonial expansion had become for England an economic necessity. Because of the depletion of her forests, which constituted perhaps the most important of her natural resources, she could no longer look for prosperity from the old industries that for centuries had been her mainstay. In the days when the Norman conquerors first set foot upon English soil the virgin woods, broken occasionally by fields and villages, had stretched in dense formation from the Scottish border to Sussex and Devonshire. But with the passage of five centuries a great change had been wrought. The growing population, the expansion of agriculture, the increasing use of wood for fuel, for shipbuilding, and for the construction of houses, had by the end of the Tudor period so denuded the forests that they no longer sufficed for the most pressing needs of the country.

Even at the present day it is universally recognized that a certain proportion of wooded land is essential to the prosperity and productivity of any country. And whenever this is lacking, not only do the building, furniture, paper and other industries suffer, but the rainfall proves insufficient, spring floods are frequent and the fertility of the soil is impaired by washing. These misfortunes are slight, however, compared with the disastrous results of the gradual thinning out of the forests of Elizabethan England. The woods were necessary

for three all-important industries, the industries upon which the prosperity and wealth of the nation were largely dependent—shipbuilding, for which were needed timber, masts, pitch, tar, resin; the manufacture of woolens, calling for a large supply of potash; smelting of all kinds, since three hundred years ago wood and not coal was the fuel used in the furnaces. It was with the deepest apprehension, then, that thoughtful Englishmen watched the gradual reduction of the forest areas, for it seemed to betoken for their country a period of declining prosperity and economic decay. "When therefore our mils of Iron and excesse of building have already turned our greatest woods into pasture and champion within these few years," says a writer of this period, "neither the scattered forests of England, nor the diminished groves of Ireland will supply the defect of our navy."<sup>1</sup>

From this intolerable situation England sought relief through foreign commerce. If she could no longer smelt her own iron, if she could not produce ship-stores or burn her own wood ashes, these things might be procured from countries where the forests were still extensive, countries such as those bordering the Baltic—Germany, Poland, Russia, Sweden. And so the vessels of the Muscovy Company in the second half of the Sixteenth century passed through the Cattegat in large numbers to make their appearance at Reval and Libau and Danzig, seeking there the raw materials so vitally necessary to England. "Muscovia and Polina doe yeerly receive many thousands for Pitch, Tarre, Sope Ashes, Rosen, Flax, Cordage, Sturgeon, Masts, Yards, Wainscot, Firres, Glasse, and such like," wrote Captain John Smith, "also Swethland for Iron and Copper."<sup>2</sup>

But this solution of her problem was obviously unsatisfactory to England. The northern voyage was long, dangerous and costly; the King of Denmark, who controlled the entrance

to the Baltic, had it within his power at any moment to exclude the English traders; the Muscovy company no longer enjoyed exemption from customs in Prussia, Denmark and Russia. In case war should break out among the northern nations this trade might for a time be cut off entirely, resulting in strangulation for England's basic industries. "The merchant knoweth," said the author of *A True Declaration*, "that through the troubles in Poland & Muscovy, (whose eternall warres are like the Antipathy of the Dragon & Elephant) all their traffique for Masts, Deales, Pitch, Tarre, Flax, Hempe, and Cordage, are every day more and more indangered."<sup>3</sup> Moreover, the trade was much impeded by the ice which for several months each year choked some of the northern ports.

The most alarming aspect of this unfortunate situation was the effect of the shortage of shipbuilding material upon the merchant marine. Situated as it was upon an island, England enjoyed communication with the nations of the world only by means of the ocean pathways. Whatever goods came to her doors, whatever goods of her own manufacture she sent to foreign markets, could be transported only by sea. It was a matter of vital import to her, then, to build up and maintain a fleet of merchant vessels second to none. But this was obviously difficult if not impossible when "the furniture of shipping" such as "Masts, Cordage, Pitch, Tar, Rossen" were not produced in quantity by England itself, and could be had "only by the favor of forraigne potency."<sup>4</sup> Already, it was stated, the decay of shipping was manifest, while large numbers of able mariners were forced to seek employment in other countries. "You know how many men for want of imployment, betake themselves to Tunis, Spaine and Florence," declared one observer, "and to serve in courses not warrantable, which would better beseeme our own walles and borders to bee spread with such branches, that their native countrey and

not forreine Princes might reap their fruit, as being both exquisite Navigators, and resolute men for service, as any the world affords.”<sup>5</sup>

It must be remembered that the merchant vessel three hundred years ago constituted an important part of the nation’s sea defence. The fleet which met the mighty Spanish Armada in the Channel and inflicted upon it so decisive a defeat, was made up in large part of volunteer ships from every English port. And the Britisher knew full well that the merchant marine constituted the “wooden walls” of his country, knew that its decay would leave England almost defenseless. At the moment when one able writer was pointing out that “the Realme of England is an Island impossible to be otherwise fortified than by stronge shippes,” another was complaining that there were scarce two vessels of 100 tons belonging to the whole city of Bristol, and few or none along the Severn from Gloucester to Land’s End on one side, and to Milford Haven on the other.<sup>6</sup>

For this intolerable situation there could be but one remedy—England must secure colonial possessions to supply her with the products for which her forests were no longer sufficient. Her bold navigators had already crossed the Atlantic, returning with alluring stories of the limitless resources of the New World, of mighty forests spreading in unbroken array for hundreds of miles along the coast and back into the interior as far as the eye could see.<sup>7</sup> Why, it was asked, should Englishmen be forced to make the hazardous journey to the Baltic in order to procure from other nations what they might easily have for themselves by taking possession of some of the limitless unoccupied areas of America? It was folly to remain in economic bondage while the road to independence stretched so invitingly before them.

Long before the Goodspeed, the Discovery and the Sarah

Constant turned their prows into the waters of the James, able English writers were urging upon the nation the absolute necessity for colonial expansion. In 1584 the farseeing Hakluyt pointed out that the recent voyage of Sir Humphrey Gilbert had proved that "pitche, tarr, rosen, sope ashes" could be produced in America in great plenty, "yea, as it is thought, ynough to serve the whole realme."<sup>8</sup> Captain Christopher Carleill had the previous year made an effort to persuade the Muscovy Company to divert its energies toward America. Why remain under the power of the King of Denmark, he asked, or other princes who "command our shippes at their pleasure," when all the products of the Baltic regions were to be had from unoccupied territories which so easily could be placed under the English flag?

It has often been taken for granted that the statesmen and merchants of three centuries ago pursued always a mistaken and shortsighted economic policy. John Fiske assures us that even at the close of the Eighteenth century the barbarous superstitions of the Middle Ages concerning trade between nations still flourished with scarcely diminished vitality. Yet it requires but a cursory study of the theories and arguments of the Elizabethan economists to realize that they were men of ability and vision, that they knew what was needed and how to procure it, that they were nearer right than many have supposed. In fact, they acted upon sound economic principles a century and a half before Adam Smith formulated and expounded them.

These men realized keenly that England's safety demanded a larger measure of economic independence and they pointed out what seemed to be the only available means of securing it. Since her forests upon which her prosperity in the past had been so largely based, were nearing the point of exhaustion, she must expand to embrace new lands where the virgin

growth of trees stood untouched. If this is barbarous, then the recent efforts of Italy to gain an independent coal supply, of Great Britain to get control of various oil fields, of the United States to build up a dye industry, are all likewise barbarous. In fact the world today in matters of economic policy has by no means gotten away from the conceptions of the men whose able writings cleared the way for the beginning of the British colonial empire.

But it must not be supposed that England in this matter was concerned only for her supply of naval stores, potash and pig iron. There were other products, not so vital it is true, but still important, which she was forced to seek abroad. From the south of Europe came salt, sugar, wine, silk, fruits; from the Far East saltpetre and dyes, together with spices for making palatable the winter's stock of food; from Holland came fish, from France wine and silk. And as in the Baltic, so elsewhere the merchants of London and Bristol and Plymouth found their activities resented and their efforts blocked and thwarted.

All commerce with the dominions of the King of Spain was carried on with the greatest difficulty. "Our necessitie of oiles and colours for our clotheinge trade being so greate," pointed out Hakluyt, "he may arreste almoste the one halfe of our navye, our traficque and recourse beinge so greate in his dominions." The rich trade with the Far East was seriously hampered by the Turks, through whose territories it had to pass, and often a heavy tribute was laid upon it by the Sultan and his minions. Even after the merchants had succeeded in lading their vessels in the eastern Mediterranean with goods from the Orient, they still had to run the gauntlet of the hostile Powers who infested that sea. If they escaped the Knights of Malta, they might be captured by the corsairs of Algeria or Tripoli.

The trade with France had also declined greatly during the closing years of the Sixteenth century. Not only had the religious wars proved a tremendous obstacle, but the government at Paris discriminated against the woolens from England by means of custom duties, while the French workmen were themselves manufacturing cloth of excellent quality in larger amounts than had hitherto been thought possible. In the Low Countries the long and bitter struggle of the people against the bloody bands of Alva had wrought such destruction and had so ruined industry that all foreign commerce had greatly declined.<sup>9</sup>

There can be no surprise, then, that many English economists felt that a crisis had been reached, that nothing save the immediate establishment of colonies would prevent disaster. With the woollen industry declining, with the shipbuilding centres almost idle, with able mariners deserting the service, with the foreign market gradually closing to English wares, with the country overrun with idle and starving laborers, with some of her chief natural resources nearly exhausted and the trade by which her needs were replenished in constant danger, England turned to America as her hope for salvation. Upon securing a foothold in the New World, hitherto monopolized by Spain and Portugal, depended Albion's future greatness and prosperity.

It is this which gave to the London Company its national character, and made its efforts to establish a colony across the Atlantic a crusade, a movement in which every Englishman was vitally concerned. The great lords and wealthy merchants who comprised the Company knew well enough that there was little hope of immediate returns upon the money they subscribed so liberally. They expected to receive their reward in another way, in the revival of English industrial life and the restoration of English economic independence. It is a singu-

lar perversion of history, an inaccurate interpretation of men and events, which for so many years beclouded our conception of the beginning of the British colonial empire. The settlement at Jamestown was not the product of a selfish, private venture, but the fruition of long years of thought and endeavor, long years of pleading with the English public, of the conscious and deliberate efforts of the nation to expand to the New World, to break the bonds of economic dependence and to restore to England the place in the world which rightfully was hers.

In addition to, but closely associated with, the economic causes of Anglo-Saxon expansion was the realization in England of the need for prompt action in putting a limit to the growing domains of the King of Spain. In the century which had elapsed since Columbus opened a new world to the peoples of Europe, this monarch had seized the richest part of the great prize, and was still reaching forward to the north and to the south. Unless England took advantage of the present opportunity, the vast American continents might be closed to her forever. Anglo-Saxon civilization in that case might well remain permanently cooped up in the little island that had seen its inception, while the Spanish language and Spanish institutions expanded to embrace the garden spots of the world.<sup>10</sup>

There were still other motives for this great movement. The English felt the prime necessity of discovering and controlling a new route to the East, they wished to expand the influence of the Anglican church and convert the Indians, they hoped to seize and fortify strategic points in America which would aid them in their struggles with the Spaniards. But these things, important as they were, paled beside the pressing necessity of national expansion, of rehabilitating English industrial life, restoring the merchant marine and securing economic independence.

Thus, when Captain Newport returned in 1607 to report that the colony of Virginia had been safely launched, many Englishmen were aroused to a high pitch of hope and expectation. Now at last a province had been secured which could supply the raw materials which England so greatly needed. The active supporters of the undertaking were lavish in their promises. Virginia would yield better and cheaper timber for shipping than Prussia or Poland, she would furnish potash in abundance, and since wood could there be had for the cutting, her copper and iron ore could be smelted on the spot. Wine could be made there, as excellent as that of the Canaries, they boasted, while it was hoped soon to manufacture silk rivalling in fineness that of Persia or of Turkey. The waters of the colony were full of "Sturgeon, Caviare and new land fish of the best," her fields could produce hemp for cordage and flax for linen. As for pitch, tar, turpentine and boards, there was a certainty of a rich return.<sup>11</sup> In February 1608, the Council of Virginia wrote to the corporation of Plymouth: "The staple and certain Comodities we have are Soap-ashes, pitch, tar, dyes of sundry sorts and rich values, timber for all uses, fishing for sturgeon and divers other sorts . . . making of Glass and Iron, and no improbable hope of richer mines."<sup>12</sup>

And no sooner had the infant colony been established than the Company turned with enthusiasm to the production of these highly desired commodities. A number of foreigners, Dutchmen and Poles skilled in the manufacture of ship-stores, were sent over to make a start with pitch, tar, turpentine and potash. They were to act as instructors, also, and it was expected that within a few years the Virginia forests would be filled with workers in these trades. Unfortunately their efforts met with ill success, and save for a few small samples of pitch and tar which were sent to England, nothing of value was produced.

For this failure the reason is apparent. All the able economists and statesmen who had predicted that the colony would become an industrial center had overlooked one vitally important factor—the lack of cheap labor. No matter how rich in natural resources, Virginia could not hope to compete with the long-established industries of Europe and Asia, because she lacked the abundant population requisite to success. It had been imagined by Hakluyt and others that the colony could avail herself of the surplus population of England, could drain off the upper stratum of the idle and unemployed. What more feasible than to set these men to work in the forests of the New World to produce the raw materials the want of which was responsible for unemployment in England itself!

But the voyage across the Atlantic was so long and costly, that it proved impossible to transport in any reasonable length of time enough workers to Virginia to supply her needs. And the few thousand that came over in the early years of the Seventeenth century were in such great demand that they could secure wages several times higher than those in vogue throughout Europe. Thus the London Company, from the very outset, found itself face to face with a difficulty which it could never surmount. Virginia could not compete with the ship-stores of the Baltic nations because her labor, when indeed it was found possible to secure labor at all, was far more expensive than that of Poland or Sweden or Russia. It mattered not that the Company sent over indentured servants, bound by their contracts to work for a certain number of years; the effect was the same. The cost of transportation swallowed up the profits from the servant's labor, when that labor was expended upon industries which had to face the competition of the cheap workers of the Old World.

It speaks well for the acumen of Captain John Smith that

he seems to have been the first to grasp clearly this truth. He wrote that the workingmen had made a beginning of "Pitch and Tarre, Glass, Sope-ashes and Clapboard," but that little had been accomplished. "If you rightly consider what an infinite toyle it is in Russia and Swetland, where the woods are proper for naught else, and though there be the helpe both of man and beast in those ancient Common-wealths, which many a hundred years have used it, yet thousands of those poor people can scarce get necessaries to live . . . you must not expect from us any such matter."<sup>13</sup>

The attempt to produce iron in Virginia was pursued even more vigorously, but with equally poor success. The early settlers, eager to assure the Company that the venture they had entered upon would soon yield a rich return, spoke enthusiastically of the numerous indications of the presence of iron ore. In 1609 Captain Newport brought with him to England a supply of ore from which sixteen or seventeen tons of metal were extracted of a quality equal or superior to that obtained from any European country. The iron was sold to the East India Company at the rate of £4 a ton.<sup>14</sup> Immediately plans were launched for taking advantage of what seemed to be a splendid opportunity. In the course of the first three years machinery for smelting and manufacturing iron was sent over and men were set to work to operate it. But the difficulties proved too great and ere long the attempt had to be abandoned.

The Company had no idea of relinquishing permanently its quest for staple commodities, however, and soon a new and far more ambitious project was set on foot for extracting the ore. The spot selected was at Falling Creek, in the present county of Chesterfield, a few miles below the rapids of the James river. George Sandys had noted with satisfaction some years before that the place was in every respect suited for

iron smelting, for in close proximity to the ore was wood in abundance, stones for the construction of the furnace and deep water for transportation. To him it seemed that nature itself had selected the site and endowed it with every facility which the enterprise could require.<sup>15</sup> Here the London Company spent from £4,000 to £5,000 in a supreme effort to make their colony answer in some degree the expectations which had been placed in it. A Captain Blewit, with no less than 80 men, was sent over to construct the works, upon which, they declared, were fixed the eyes of "God, Angels and men." But Blewit soon succumbed to one of the deadly epidemics which yearly swept over the little colony, and a Mr. John Berkeley, accompanied by 20 experienced workers, came over to take his place.

At first things seem to have gone well with this ambitious venture. Soon the Virginia forests were resounding to the whir of the axe and the crash of falling trees, to the exclamations of scores of busy men as they extracted the ore, built their furnace and began the work of smelting. Operations had progressed so far that it was confidently predicted that soon large quantities of pig iron would be leaving the James for England, when an unexpected disaster put an abrupt end to the enterprise. In the terrible massacre of 1622, when the implacable Opechancanough attempted at one stroke to rid the country of its white invaders, the little industrial settlement at Falling Creek was completely destroyed. The furnace was ruined, the machinery thrown into the river, the workmen butchered. This project, which had absorbed so much of the attention and resources of the Company, is said to have yielded only a shovel, a pair of tongs and one bar of iron.<sup>16</sup>

The history of the attempts to establish glass works in Virginia is also a story of wasted energy and money, of final failure. The Dutch and Polish workers who came in 1608 set up a furnace at Jamestown,<sup>17</sup> but nothing more is heard

of them, and it is clear that they met with no success. Nor did Captain William Norton, who arrived in 1621 with a number of skilled Italian glass workers fare any better.<sup>18</sup> In 1623 George Sandys wrote: "Capt. Norton dyed with all save one of his servants, the Italians fell extremely sick yet recovered; but I conceive they would gladly make the work to appear unfeasable, that they might by that means be dismissed for England. The fier hath now been for six weeks in ye furnace and yet nothing effected. They claim that the sand will not run." Shortly after this the workmen brought matters to an end by cracking the furnace with a crowbar.<sup>18</sup>

Thus ended in complete failure the efforts of England to reap what she considered the legitimate fruits of this great enterprise. The day of which her farseeing publicists had dreamed had arrived; she had at last challenged the right of Spain to all North America, her sons were actually settled on the banks of the James, a beginning had been made in the work of building a colonial empire. But the hope which had so fired the mind of Hakluyt, the hope of attaining through Virginia British economic independence, was destined never to be fulfilled. However lavishly nature had endowed the colony with natural resources, however dense her forests, however rich her mines, however wide and deep her waterways, she could not become an industrial community. Fate had decreed for her another destiny. But England was reluctant to accept the inevitable in this matter. Long years after Sir Edwin Sandys and his fellow workers of the London Company had passed to their rest, we find the royal ministers urging upon the colony the necessity of producing pig iron and silk and potash, and promising every possible encouragement in the work. But the causes which operated to bring failure in 1610 or 1620 prevented success in 1660 and 1680. Virginia had not the abundant supply of labor essential to the

development of an industrial community and for many decades, perhaps for centuries, could not hope to attain it. Her future lay in the discovery and exploitation of one staple commodity for which she was so preëminently adapted that she could, even with her costly labor, meet the competition of other lands. The future history of Virginia was to be built up around the Indian plant tobacco.

## *CHAPTER II*

### THE INDIAN WEED

HISTORY is baffling in its complexity. The human mind instinctively strives for simplicity, endeavors to reproduce all things to set rules, to discover the basic principles upon which all action is based. And in various lines of research much success has attended these efforts. We know the laws underlying the movements of the planets, of various chemical reactions, of plant and animal life. It is inevitable, then, that attempts should be made to accomplish similar results in history, to master the vast multitude of facts which crowd its pages, many of them seemingly unrelated, and show that after all they obey certain fundamental laws. Despite the vaunted freedom of the human will, it is maintained, mankind like the planets or the chemical agents, cannot escape the operation of definite forces to which it is subjected. And if these forces are studied and understood, to some extent at least, the course of future events may be predicted.

Thus it may be accepted as practically established that in any country and with any people a condition of continued disorder and anarchy must be succeeded by one of despotism. History records, we believe, no exception to this rule, while there are many instances which tend to confirm it. The absolute rule of the Caesars followed the anarchy of the later Roman republic, the Oliverian Protectorate succeeded the British civil wars, the first French Empire the Reign of Terror, the Bolshevik despotism the collapse of the old regime in Russia. Such will always be the case, we are told, because mankind turns instinctively to any form of government in quest of

## THE PLANTERS OF

protection from anarchy, and the easiest form of government to establish and operate is despotism.

Not content with generalizations of this kind, however, certain historians have undertaken to reduce all human action to some one great fundamental principle. The Freudian view emphasizes the influence of sex; Buckle maintains that the effect of climate is all-powerful. In recent years many students, while not agreeing that the solution of the problem is quite so simple, yet believe that underlying all social development will be found economic forces of one kind or another, that in commerce and industry and agriculture lies the key to every event of moment in the history of mankind. Often these forces have been obscured and misunderstood, but close study will always reveal them. It is folly to waste time, they say, as writers have so long done, in setting forth the adventures of this great man or that, in dwelling upon the details of political struggles or recounting the horrors of war. All these are but surface indications of the deeper movements underneath, movements in every case brought about by economic developments.

But this interpretation of history is by no means universally accepted. While admitting readily that the conditions surrounding the production and exchange of useful commodities have affected profoundly the course of events, many historians deny that they give the key to every important movement. We must study also the progress of human thought, of religion, of politics, or our conception of history will be warped and imperfect. How is it possible to explain the French religious wars of the Sixteenth century by the theory of economic causes? In what way does it account for the rebellion of Virginia and North Carolina and Maryland against the British government in 1775? How can one deny that the assassination of Abraham Lincoln affected profoundly the course of American history?

These efforts to simplify the meaning of human events have often led to error, have stressed certain events too strongly, have minimized others. The complexity of history is self-evident; we must for the present at least content ourselves with complex interpretations of it. If there be any great underlying principles which explain all, they have yet to be discovered.

Thus it would be folly in the study of colonial Virginia to blind ourselves to the importance of various non-economic factors, the love of freedom which the settlers brought with them from England, their affection for the mother country, the influence of the Anglican church. Yet it is obvious that we cannot understand the colony, its social structure, its history, its development unless we have a clear insight into the economic forces which operated upon it. These Englishmen, finding themselves in a new country, surrounded by conditions fundamentally different from those to which they had been accustomed, worked out a new and unique society, were themselves moulded into something different.

And in colonial Virginia history there is a key, which though it may not explain all, opens the door to much that is fundamental. This key is tobacco. The old saying that the story of Virginia is but the story of tobacco is by no means a gross exaggeration. It was this Indian plant, so despised by many of the best and ablest men of the time, which determined the character of the life of the colony and shaped its destinies for two and a half centuries. Tobacco was the chief factor in bringing final and complete failure to the attempts to produce useful raw materials, it was largely instrumental in moulding the social classes and the political structure of the colony, it was almost entirely responsible for the system of labor, it even exerted a powerful influence upon religion and morals. In a word, one can understand almost nothing of Virginia, its in-

## THE PLANTERS OF

fancy, its development, its days of misfortune, its era of prosperity, its peculiar civilization, the nature of its relations to England, unless one knows the history of tobacco.

As though they had a prophetic vision of its future importance, the Virginia Indians revered the plant. To them it was an especial gift direct from the Great Spirit, and as such was endowed with unusual properties for doing good. When the fields of maize were dried and parched for lack of rain they powdered the tobacco and cast it to the winds that the evil genii might be propitiated; their priests on great occasions fed it to the sacrificial fires; when the usual catch of fish failed it was scattered over the water.<sup>1</sup> Smoking was considered a token of friendship and peace. When the white men first visited the native villages they soon found that to reject the proffered pipe was to offend their savage hosts and incur their hostility.

It was John Rolfe, celebrated as the husband of Pocahontas, who first experimented with the native leaf. This gentleman was himself fond of smoking, but he found the Virginia tobacco as it came from the hands of the savages, decidedly inferior to that of the West Indies. The leaf itself was small, and although the flavor was weak it was biting to the tongue.<sup>2</sup> Rolfe's efforts proved entirely successful. In 1614, two years after his first attempt, he had obtained a product which Ralph Hamor declared to be as "strong, sweet and pleasant as any under the sun."<sup>3</sup>

Thus, early in its history, Virginia had found a commodity for which she was preëminently suited, in the production of which she could compete successfully with any country in the world. And for her tobacco she had a ready market. During the reign of Queen Elizabeth the habit of smoking had spread rapidly among the upper classes of English, until at the end of the sixteenth century, it was almost universal. When

James I ascended the throne, although feeling a strong aversion to tobacco, he was forced to take up its use in order not to appear conspicuous among his courtiers, for the dictates of custom seem to have been as strong three hundred years ago as at present.<sup>4</sup> At the time that Rolfe was making his experiments England was spending yearly for the Spanish product many thousands of pounds.

It is not surprising, then, that the colonists turned eagerly to tobacco culture. The news that Rolfe's little crop had been pronounced in England to be of excellent quality spread rapidly from settlement to settlement, bringing with it new hope and determination. Immediately tobacco absorbed the thoughts of all, became the one topic of conversation, and every available patch of land was seized upon for its cultivation. The fortified areas within the palisades were crowded with tobacco plants, while even the streets of Jamestown were utilized by the eager planters.<sup>5</sup> In 1617 the George set sail for England laden with 20,000 pounds of Virginia leaf, the first of the vast fleet of tobacco ships which for centuries were to pass through the capes of the Chesapeake bound for Europe.<sup>6</sup> By 1627, the tobacco exports amounted to no less than half a million pounds.<sup>7</sup>

The London Company, together with the host of patriotic Englishmen who had placed such great hopes in the colony, were much disappointed at this unexpected turn of events. They had sought in the New World those "solid commodities" which they realized were fundamental to the prosperity of their country, commodities upon which English industrial life was founded. And they had found only the Indian weed—tobacco. This plant not only contributed nothing to the wealth of the kingdom, it was felt, but was positively injurious to those who indulged in its use. Surely, declared one writer, men "grow mad and crazed in the brain in that they would

adventure to suck the smoke of a weed." James I thought there could be no baser and more harmful corruption, while Charles I expressed himself with equal emphasis. So late as 1631 the latter protested against the growing use of tobacco, which he termed "an evil habit of late tymes."<sup>8</sup>

Yet England soon learned to welcome the colonial tobacco as far better than no product at all. Hitherto the leaf in use had been raised in the Spanish colonies, and England's annual tobacco bill was becoming larger and larger. It seemed calamitous that British industry should be drained of good and useful commodities in exchange for a plant the consumption of which was harmful rather than beneficial. It was at least some satisfaction to know, then, that England could substitute for the Spanish leaf the growth of their own colonies. Apparently it was only later, however, that there came a full realization of the opportunity afforded for enriching England and building up her merchant marine by exporting tobacco to foreign countries. For the present they accepted this one product of their experiment in colonial expansion, reluctantly and with keen disappointment, as the best that could be obtained.

Yet it was obvious to the London Company that tobacco held out the only prospect, not only of securing a profit from their venture, but of bringing to Virginia some measure of prosperity. The first consignment of leaf which came from the colony sold for no less than 5s. 3d. a pound, a price which promised a rich return to the planters on the James and their backers in England.<sup>9</sup> And they much preferred to have a prosperous colony, even when prosperity was founded on tobacco, than a weak, impoverished settlement, which would be a drain upon their personal resources and of no value to the nation. Thus they accepted the inevitable, gave what encouragement they could to the new product, and sought to

use it as a means for building up the British empire in America. When once England had established herself firmly in the New World, it would be time enough to return to the attempt to secure from the colony ship-stores, potash, iron and silk.

With the overthrow of the Company, however, the Crown made repeated efforts to direct the energies of Virginia away from the all-absorbing cultivation of tobacco. In 1636 Charles I wrote to the Governor and Council bidding them moderate the excessive quantities of the plant laid out each year and to endeavor to produce some other staple commodities.<sup>10</sup> "The King cannot but take notice," he reiterated the next year, "how little that colony hath advanced in Staple commodities fit for their own subsistence and clothing," and he warned the planters to emulate the Barbados and Caribee Islands, where a beginning had been made in cotton, wool and other useful things.<sup>11</sup> But the colonists paid no heed to these repeated warnings. The King's commands were no more effective in establishing new industries than had been the first attempts of the Company. Virginia was not prepared to compete with the workers of Europe in their own chosen fields, and persisted, had to persist, in the production of the one commodity for which she possessed unsurpassed natural advantages.

It is remarkable how universally the plant was cultivated by all classes of Virginians throughout the colonial period. It was difficult to find skilled artisans in any line of work, since those who had pursued in England the various trades usually deserted them, when they landed in the colony, in order to turn to the raising of tobacco. And the few who continued to pursue their old vocations usually rented or purchased a small tract of land and devoted a part of their time to its cultivation. Blacksmiths, carpenters, shipwrights,

coopers all raised their little tobacco crop and sold it to the British merchants,<sup>12</sup> while even the poor minister sought to make ends meet by planting his glebe with Orinoco or Sweet-scented. The Governor himself was not free from the all-prevailing custom, and frequently was the possessor of a farm where his servants and slaves, like those of other gentlemen in the colony, were kept busy tending the tobacco crop.

It is doubtful whether the members of the London Company, even Sir Edwin Sandys himself, ever attempted to visualize the social structure which would develop in the Virginia they were planning. If so, they unquestionably pictured a state of affairs very different from that which the future held in store. They took it for granted that Virginia would to a large extent be a duplicate of England. In the forests of the New World would grow up towns and villages, centers of industry and centers of trade. The population would be divided into various classes—well-to-do proprietors boasting of the title of gentleman; professional men, lawyers, physicians, ministers; skilled artisans of all kinds; day laborers.

We catch a glimpse of the Virginia of their minds from a Broadside issued in 1610, appealing for volunteers for service in the colony.<sup>13</sup> We can see the shipwrights at work in the busy yards of thriving ports; the smelters caring for their iron and copper furnaces; the "minerall-men" digging out the ore; saltmakers evaporating the brackish waters for their useful product; vine-dressers tending their abundant crops of grapes and coopers turning out the hogsheads in which to store the wine which came from the presses; bricklayers and carpenters fashioning substantial houses; fishermen bringing in the plentiful yield of the day and dressers preparing the fish for foreign shipment; joiners, smiths, gardeners, bakers, gun-founders, ploughwrights, brewers, sawyers, fowlers, each plying his trade in the New Brittania.

But how different was the reality. Virginia became, not an industrial, but a distinctly agricultural community. For more than a century it could boast not a single town worthy of the name.<sup>14</sup> It was but a series of plantations, not large in extent, but stretching out for miles along the banks of the rivers and creeks, all devoted to the raising of tobacco. The population of the colony was but the aggregate of the population of the plantation—the owner, the wage earners, the indentured servant, a few slaves. Virginia in the Seventeenth century, despite the design of its founders, developed a life of its own, a life not only unlike that of England, but unique and distinct.

Immigration, like everything else in the colony, was shaped by the needs of tobacco. For its successful production the plant does not require skilled labor or intensive cultivation. The barbarous natives of Africa, who later in the century were imported in such large numbers, eventually proved quite adequate to the task. But it does require the service of many hands. For decades after Rolfe's discovery had opened a new vista of prosperity for Virginia, fertile land was so cheap that a person even of moderate means might readily purchase an extensive plantation,<sup>15</sup> but it would be of little service to him unless he could find hands for clearing away the forests, breaking the soil, tending and curing the plants.

Of the three requirements of production—natural resources, capital and labor—the fertile soil furnished the first in abundance, the second could readily be secured, but the last remained for a full century the one great problem of the planters. From the days of Sir George Yeardley to those of Nicholson and Andros there was a persistent and eager demand for workers. Of this there can be no better evidence than the remarkably high wages which prevailed in the colony, especially in the years prior to the Restoration. In fact, it is probable that the laborer received for his services four or five times the

amount he could earn in England. Even during the time of the London Company we find George Sandys writing to a friend in London to procure indentured servants for the colony as the wages demanded were intolerable. A day's work brought, in addition to food, a pound of tobacco valued at one shilling, while in England the unskilled worker considered himself fortunate if he could earn so much in a week.<sup>16</sup>

In his efforts to solve this acute problem the planter found little hope in the aborigines. The Spaniards, it is true, had made use of the Indians to till their fields or work in the gold and silver mines, but the Pamunkey and the Powhatan were cast in a different mold from the Aztec and the Peruvian. To hunt them out of their native lairs and bind them to arduous and ignominious servitude was hardly to be thought of. Their spirit was too proud to be thus broken, the safe refuge of the woods too near at hand. One might as well have attempted to hitch lions and tigers to the plough shaft, as to place these wild children of the forest at the handles. At times it proved practicable to make use of Indian children for servants, and there are numerous instances on record in which they are found in the homes of the planters.<sup>17</sup> But this, of course, could be of little service in solving the pressing labor problem, in clearing new ground or tilling the idle fields. The Virginia landowner was forced to turn elsewhere for his helpers.

In 1619 a Dutch privateer put into the James river and disembarked twenty Africans who were sold to the settlers as slaves. This event, so full of evil portent for the future of Virginia, might well have afforded a natural and satisfactory solution of the labor problem. Slaves had long been used in the Spanish colonies, proving quite competent to do the work of tending the tobacco plants, and bringing handsome returns to their masters. But it was impossible at this time for England to supply her plantations with this type

of labor. The slave trade was in the hands of the Dutch, who had fortified themselves on the African coast and jealously excluded other nations. Thus while the demand for negro slaves remained active in the colony, they increased in numbers very slowly. The muster of 1624-25 shows only 22.<sup>18</sup> During the following half century there was a small influx of negroes, but their numbers were still too small to affect seriously the economic life of the colony.<sup>19</sup>

The settlers were thus forced to look to England itself to supply them with hands for their tobacco fields. They knew that in the mother country were many thousands of indigent persons who would welcome an opportunity to better their lot by migrating to the New World. And the English statesmen, feeling that there was need for blood letting, welcomed an opportunity to divert the surplus population to the new colony in America.<sup>20</sup> The decline in English foreign trade and the stagnation of home industry had brought unemployment and suffering to every class of workers. Wages were so low that the most industrious could not maintain themselves in comfort, while to provide against want in case of sickness or old age was hardly to be thought of. Every parish, every town swarmed with persons stricken with abject poverty. In some parts of the country no less than 30 per cent of the population were dependent in part upon charity for their daily bread, while many were driven into vagabondage and crime, becoming an element of danger rather than of strength to the nation.<sup>21</sup> It seemed to the planters that the mother country constituted an abundant reservoir of labor, a reservoir already overflowing and capable of supplying indefinitely their every need.

The only drawback was the long and expensive voyage across the Atlantic. The fare, even for the poorest and most crowded accommodations, was no less than six pounds ster-

ling, a sum far beyond the means of the thriftiest laborer.<sup>23</sup> Obviously some scheme had to be evolved to overcome this difficulty before Virginia could make use of English labor. And so the planters turned to the simple expedient of advancing the passage money to the immigrant and of placing him under strict legal bonds to work it out after reaching the colony.

This system, around which the economic life of Virginia centered for a full century, proved satisfactory to all concerned. The credit advanced to the immigrant made it possible for him to earn his ocean fare, not in England where labor was cheap, but in America where it was dear. In other words, he was enabled without delay to enjoy the full benefits of selling his services in the best market. The necessity for placing him under a stringent contract or indenture is evident. Had this not been done the immigrant, upon finding himself in Virginia, might have refused to carry out his part of the bargain. But the indenture was in no sense a mark of servitude or slavery. It simply made it obligatory for the newcomer, under pain of severe penalties, to work out his passage money, and until that was accomplished to surrender a part of the personal liberty so dear to every Englishman.

It is erroneous to suppose that most of the servants were degenerates or criminals. It is true that the English Government from time to time sought to lessen the expense of providing for convicted felons by sending some of them to the colonies, among them on rare occasions a few decidedly objectionable characters. More than once the Virginians protested vigorously against this policy as dangerous to the peace and prosperity of the colony.<sup>24</sup> By far the larger part of these penal immigrants, however, were but harmless paupers, driven perhaps to theft or some other petty offense by cold and hunger. Often they were sentenced to deportation by merci-

ful judges in order that they might not feel the full weight of the harsh laws of that day.<sup>24</sup>

And of the small number of real criminals who came in, few indeed made any lasting imprint upon the social fabric of the colony. Many served for life and so had no opportunity of marrying and rearing families to perpetuate their degenerate traits. Those who escaped fled from the confines of settled Virginia to the mountains or to the backwoods of North Carolina. Many others succumbed to the epidemics which proved so deadly to the newcomers from England. In fact the criminal servant was but a passing incident in the life and development of England's greatest and most promising colony.<sup>25</sup>

An appreciable proportion of the so-called criminal laborers were no more than political prisoners taken in the rebellions of the Seventeenth century. These men frequently represented the sturdiest and most patriotic elements in the kingdom and were a source of strength rather than of weakness to the colony. When Drogheda was captured by Cromwell's stern Puritan troops in 1649, some of the unfortunate rebels escaped the firing squad only to be sent to America to serve in the sugar or tobacco fields. Just how many of these Irishmen fell to the share of Virginia it is impossible to say, but the number rises well into the hundreds, and the patent books of the period are full of headrights of undoubted Irish origin.<sup>26</sup>

When Charles II was restored to the throne in 1660 it became the turn of the Puritans to suffer, and many non-conformists and former Oliverian soldiers were sent to Virginia. In fact so many old Commonwealth men were serving in the tobacco fields in 1663 that they felt strong enough to plot, not only for their own freedom, but for the overthrow of the colonial government.<sup>27</sup> In 1678, after the suppression of the Scottish Covenanters by the Highland Host, a new batch of prisoners were sent to the plantations.<sup>28</sup> Seven years later

many of Monmouth's followers taken at Sedgemour, who were fortunate enough to escape the fury of Jeffreys and Kirk, were forced to work in the plantations.

But the bulk of the servants were neither criminals nor political prisoners, but poor persons seeking to better their condition in the land of promise across the Atlantic. They constituted the vanguard of that vast stream of immigrants which for three centuries Europe has poured upon our shores. The indentured servant differed in no essential from the poor Ulsterite or German who followed him in the Eighteenth century, or the Irishman, the Italian or the Slav in the Nineteenth. Like them he found too severe the struggle for existence at home, like them he sought to reach a land where labor, the only commodity he had to sell, would bring the highest return. The fact that his passage was paid for him and that he was bound by contract to work it out after reaching America, in no wise differentiates him from the newcomers of later days. In 1671 Sir William Berkeley reported to the Board of Trade that the colony contained "6,000 Christian servants for a short tyme," who had come with the "hope of bettering their condition in a Growing Country."<sup>29</sup>

Virginia is fortunate in having preserved a record of this, the first great migration to the English colonies, which in some respects is remarkably complete. In fact, the names of fully three-fourths of all the persons who came to the colony, whether as freemen or servants during the first century of its existence, are on record at the Land Office at Richmond, and at all times available to the student of history. In the early days of the settlement a law was passed designed to stimulate immigration, by which the Government pledged itself to grant fifty acres of land to any person who would pay the passage from Europe to Virginia of a new settler. Thus if one brought over ten indentured servants he would be entitled to

500 acres of land, if he brought 100, he could demand 5,000 acres. But the headright, as it was called, was not restricted to servants; if one came over as a freeman, paying his own passage, he was entitled to the fifty acres. Should he bring also his family, he could demand an additional fifty acres for his wife and fifty for each child or other member of the household.<sup>30</sup>

When the Government issued a grant for land under this law, the planter was required to record with the clerk of the county court the names of all persons for whose transportation the claim was made. Some of these lists have been lost, especially for the period from 1655 to 1666, but most of them remain, constituting an inexhaustible storehouse of information concerning the colony and the people who came to its shores.<sup>31</sup> How the papers escaped destruction during the fire which did so much damage in the Secretary's office at the time of Andros, it is impossible to say. The explanation is to be found perhaps in the fact that copies of the records were kept, not only at Williamsburg, but in the several counties, so that in case of loss by fire new entries could be made.

Immigration to Virginia continued in unabated volume throughout the Seventeenth century. The needs of the tobacco plantations were unceasing, and year after year the surplus population of England poured across the Atlantic in response. An examination of the list of headrights shows that the annual influx was between 1500 and 2000. Even during the Civil War and Commonwealth periods this average seems to have been maintained with surprising consistency. Apparently the only limit which could be set upon it was the available space on board the merchant fleet which each year left England for the Chesapeake bay. Thus in the year ending May 1635 we find that 2000 landed in the colony,<sup>32</sup> while in 1674 and again in 1682 the same average was maintained.<sup>33</sup>

At times the numbers dropped to 1200 or 1300, but this was the exception rather than the rule. All in all, considerably more than 100,000 persons migrated to the colony in the years that elapsed between the first settlement at Jamestown and the end of the century.<sup>34</sup>

This great movement, which far surpassed in magnitude any other English migration of the century, fixed for all time the character of the white population of tidewater Virginia. The vast bulk of the settlers were English. An examination of the headright lists shows here and there an Irish or a Scotch name, and on very rare occasions one of French or Italian origin, but in normal periods fully 95 per cent were unmistakably Anglo-Saxon. In fact, such names as Dixon, Bennett, Anderson, Adams, Greene, Brooke, Brown, Cooper, Gibson, Hall, Harris, King, Jackson, Long, Martin, Miller, Newton, Philips, Richards, Turner, White, appear with monotonous repetition. Except in the years 1655 and 1656, after the Drogheda tragedy when one sees such names as O'Lanny, O'Leaby, O'Mally, and Machoone, or in 1679 when there was a sprinkling of Scottish names, the entire list is distinctly English.

It must not be supposed that immigration to Virginia in the Seventeenth century was restricted to indentured servants. Some of the settlers were freemen, paying their own passage and establishing themselves as proprietors immediately after arriving in the colony. But the conditions which attracted them were the same as those which brought over the servants. In both cases it was tobacco, the rich returns which it promised and the urgent need it had of labor, which impelled them to leave their homes in England to seek their fortunes in the strange land beyond the seas.

Having seen the character of the immigration to Virginia, it remains to determine what was the fate of the settler after he

reached the colony, what rôle lay before him in its social and economic life. Would he remain permanently in the status of a servant, entering into a new agreement with his master after the expiration of the old? Would he eventually become a day laborer, working for wages upon the estates of the wealthy? Would he become a tenant? Could he hope to become a freeholder, making of Virginia, like Rome in the early days of the republic, the land of the small proprietor?

## *CHAPTER III*

### THE VIRGINIA YEOMANRY

THE system of indentured labor differed vitally from negro slavery. The servant usually was bound to his master for a limited period only, and at the expiration of four or five years was a free man, to go where he would and pursue what employment seemed most lucrative. And of tremendous importance to the future of Virginia was the fact that he was of the same race and blood as the rest of the population. There was no inherent reason why he might not take up land, marry and become a part of the social structure of the colony.

When races of marked physical differences are placed side by side in the same territory, assimilation of one or the other becomes difficult, and an age long repugnance and conflict is apt to result. Perhaps the greatest crime against the southern colonies was not the introduction of slavery, but the introduction of negroes. It was inevitable that eventually slavery would be abolished. But the negro race in America cannot be abolished, it cannot be shipped back to Africa, it cannot well be absorbed into the white population. Today California is struggling to avoid a like problem by excluding the Japanese, while Canada, Australia and New Zealand are closing their doors to Orientals of all kinds.

Thus Virginia, during its century of white immigration, was storing up no perplexing difficulties for the future, was developing slowly but surely into an industrious, democratic, Anglo-Saxon community. Not until the black flood of slaves was turned loose upon her, strangling her peasantry and revolutionizing her industrial and social life, was her future put

in pawn. The white servants, so far as they remained in the colony, became bone of her bone, flesh of her flesh, promised her a homogeneous race, a sound economic and political development.

When the alien newcomer to the United States sees from the deck of his steamer the Statue of Liberty and the ragged sky line of lower Manhattan, he feels that the goal of his ambition has been reached, that the land of opportunity lies before him. But to the indentured settler of the Seventeenth century, his arrival in the James or the York was but the beginning of his struggles. Before he could grasp the riches of the New World, he must pay the price of his passage, must work out through arduous years the indenture to which he had affixed his signature.

And these years were filled not only with toil, perhaps with hardship, but with the greatest peril. He might account himself fortunate indeed if during the first twelve months he escaped the so-called Virginia sickness. Tidewater Virginia for the English settlers was a pest-ridden place. The low and marshy ground, the swarming mosquitoes, the hot sun, the unwholesome drinking water combined to produce an unending epidemic of dysentery and malaria. And at frequent intervals, especially in the early years, yellow fever, scurvy and plague swept over the infant colony, leaving behind a ghastly train of suffering and death.<sup>1</sup> At one time the mortality among the settlers upon the James ran as high as 75 per cent and for a while it seemed that this attempt of the British nation to secure a foothold upon the American continent must end in failure.<sup>2</sup>

But as the years wore on better conditions prevailed. Governor Berkeley testified in 1671, "there is not oft seasoned hands (as we term them) that die now, whereas heretofore not one of five escaped the first year."<sup>3</sup> This improvement

was brought about by the use of Peruvian bark, a clearer understanding of sanitary matters and the selection of more healthful sites for plantations. At the time when Sir William wrote it is probable that 80 per cent or more of the indentured servants survived the dangers of the tobacco fields, completed their terms of service and, if they remained in the colony, became freedmen with the full rights of Englishmen and Virginians.

In the period from 1660 to 1725 there was, as we shall see, an exodus of poor whites from Virginia. This, however, was chiefly the result of the influx of slaves which marked the end of the century, and it is safe to assume that prior to the Restoration there was no extensive movement from Virginia to other colonies. The servant, upon attaining his freedom, usually remained in the colony and sought to establish himself there.

Although it is impossible to determine accurately the average length of service required by the indentures, there is reason to believe that it did not exceed five years. In cases of controversy between masters and servants who had come in without written contracts as to when their terms should expire, it was at first required by law that the period be fixed at five years if the age was in excess of twenty-one.<sup>4</sup> In 1654, however, a new act was passed by the Assembly, making it necessary for those who had no indentures, if over sixteen to serve six years, if less than sixteen until the twenty-fourth year had been reached.<sup>5</sup> This was found to work to the disadvantage of the colony by discouraging immigration, and in 1662 the law was changed so that in all doubtful cases the legal term should be five years for persons over sixteen.<sup>6</sup> Since the Assembly, which was so largely made up of persons who themselves held servants, would certainly not fix the legal term for a period shorter than that normally provided

for in the indentures, we may assume that usually the servant secured his freedom within four or five years after his arrival in the colony.

Thus it is evident that the bulk of the population could not have been, as is so often supposed, made up of large landed proprietors with their servants and slaves. Such a conception takes no account of the annual translation of hundreds of men and women from bondsmen into freedmen. The short duration of the average term of service, together with the fact that the servants were usually still young when freed, made it inevitable that in time the freedmen would outnumber those in service. The size of the annual immigration could in no wise alter this situation, for the greater the influx of servants, the greater would be the resulting graduation into the class of freedmen.

The average number of headrights, as we have seen, was probably not less than 1750 a year. If it is assumed that 1500 of these were servants, five per cent of whom served for life and 20 per cent died before the expiration of their terms, no less than 1125 would remain to become freedmen. While the number of those under indenture remained practically stationary, the size of the freedman class grew larger with the passing of the years.

Placing the average term at five years, then, and the average mortality at twenty per cent, there would be in service at any given time some 6,000 men and women. In fact, Sir William Berkeley, in his famous report of 1671, estimated the number of servants in the colony at this figure.<sup>7</sup> On the other hand an annual accession of 1125 to the class of freedmen would in five years amount to 5,625, in ten years to 11,250, in fifteen to 16,875, in twenty to 22,500. At the end of half a century no less than 56,250 persons would have emerged from servitude to become free citizens. Although there is

every reason to believe that these figures are substantially correct,<sup>8</sup> their accuracy or lack of accuracy in no way affect the principle involved. From its very nature it was impossible that the system of indentured servants should long remain the chief factor in the industrial life of the colony or supply most of the labor.

It is true, of course, that the number of those completing their terms of indenture is not an absolute gauge, at any given date, of the size of the freedman class. To determine this it would be necessary to know the average span of life of the freedman, a thing certainly not worked out at the time and impossible of accomplishment now. We may assume, however, that it was relatively long. The newcomer who had lived through the first terrible year in the tobacco fields had been thoroughly tested, "seasoned" as the planters called it, and was reasonably certain of reaching a mature age. Moreover, the servants were almost universally of very tender years. Seldom indeed would a dealer accept one over twenty-eight, and the average seems to have been between seventeen and twenty-three. The reasons for this are obvious. Not only were young men and women more adaptable to changed conditions, more capable of resisting the Virginia climate, stronger and more vigorous, but they proved more tractable and entered upon the adventure more eagerly.<sup>9</sup> These conclusions are fully borne out by an examination of the lists of servants given in Hotten's *Emigrants to America*. Of the first 159 servants here entered whose ages are attached, the average is twenty-three years.<sup>10</sup> And as many of these persons were brought over as skilled artisans to take part in the industrial life which the Company had planned for the colony, it is probable that they were much older than the average servant of later days who came as an agricultural laborer. There is every reason to believe, then, that the average servant

was still in his prime when he completed his term, perhaps not more than twenty-six or twenty-seven, with many years of usefulness and vigor before him.

It must also be remembered that the freedman, by a display of energy and capability, might acquire property, marry and rear a family. While the number of indentured servants was strictly limited to those who were brought in from the outside, the class of poor freemen might and did enjoy a natural increase within itself. Thus it was inevitable that with the passing of the years the servants were more and more outnumbered by the growing group of freemen. In 1649, when the population was but 15,000,<sup>11</sup> 6,000 servants might well have performed most of the manual labor of the tobacco fields, but in 1670, when the inhabitants numbered 40,000,<sup>12</sup> or in 1697 when they were 70,000,<sup>13</sup> they would form a comparatively small proportion of the people, so small in fact that most of the work of necessity had to be done by freemen. In other words the picture so often presented, even by historians of established reputation, of a Seventeenth century Virginia in which the land was divided into large plantations owned by rich proprietors and tilled chiefly by indentured servants is entirely erroneous. Such a state of affairs was made impossible by the very nature of the system of indentures itself.

It becomes a matter of prime interest, then, to determine what became of the mass of freedmen, what rôle they played in the social and economic life of the colony. Because the servant who had completed his term was free to follow his own bent, we have no right to assume that he sought at once to establish himself as an independent proprietor. He might seek service with the large planters as a hired laborer, he might become a tenant. In either case the population would have been divided into two classes—the wealthy landowner and those who served him.

We know that at all periods of Virginia history there were a certain number of persons employed as wage earners. The colonial laws and the county records contain many references to them. Payment of wages was not unusual even under the Company, and we are told by George Sandys that hired laborers received one pound of tobacco a day in addition to their food.<sup>14</sup> In later years we have from time to time references to wage rates, and in some cases copies of contracts entered into between employer and wage earner. But such cases are comparatively rare, and it is evident that the use of hired labor throughout the colonial period was the exception rather than the rule. In fact it would seem that few save servants newly freed and lacking in the funds necessary for purchasing and equipping little farms of their own ever sought employment upon the large plantations. And even in such cases the contracts were for comparatively short periods, since it often required but a year or two of labor for the freedman to save enough from his wages to make a beginning as an independent proprietor.

When once established, there was no reason, in the days prior to the introduction of slavery, why he should not hold his own in competition with his wealthy neighbor. In the production of tobacco the large plantation, so long as it was cultivated only by expensive white labor, offered no marked advantage over the small. With the cost of land very low, with the means of earning the purchase price so readily in hand, with the conditions for an independent career all so favorable, it was not to be expected that the freedman should content himself permanently with the status of a hired laborer.

Nor was there any reason why he should become a tenant. Had all the fertile land been preëmpted, as was the case on the banks of the Hudson, the poor man might have been compelled to lease the soil upon which he expended his efforts or

do without entirely. But such was not the case. It is true that at the end of the Seventeenth century certain wealthy men got possession of large tracts of unsettled land, but their monopoly was so far from complete that they gladly sold off their holdings in little parcels to the first purchasers who presented themselves. Apparently they made no attempts to establish themselves in a position similar to that of the great landlords of England.

The records afford ample evidence that the leasing of property was by no means unknown in colonial Virginia, but the custom was comparatively rare. Hugh Jones, writing in 1721, declared that the tenant farmers constituted but a small fraction of the population, a fact which he explained by the unusual facilities for acquiring property in fee simple.<sup>15</sup> It would have been folly for the tobacco planter to expend his labor upon another man's property, perhaps erecting barns and fences and otherwise improving it, when he could for so small an outlay secure land of his own.

Thus we are led to the conclusion that the average Virginia plantation must have been comparatively small in extent. The development of large estates was narrowly limited by the various factors which made it impossible to secure an adequate labor supply—the restrictions upon the slave trade, the insufficient number of indentured servants and the shortness of their terms, the unwillingness of freedmen and others to work for wages. On the other hand, it would be expected that the servants upon securing their freedom would purchase land of their own, and cover all tidewater Virginia with little farms.

Turning to the various records of the time that deal with the distribution of land—deeds, wills, transfers, tax lists, inventories—we find that these conclusions are fully borne out. All reveal the fact that the average plantation, especially in the Seventeenth century, so far from vieing with the vast estates

in existence in certain parts of America, was but a few hundred acres in extent.

The land transfers of Surry county afford an interesting illustration. In thirty-four instances mentioned during the years from 1684 to 1686, for which the exact number of acres is given, the largest is 500 acres, the smallest twenty. The aggregate of all land which changed hands is 6,355 acres, or an average of 187 for each sale. There are eleven transfers of 100 acres or less, twenty-three transfers of 200 or less and only four of more than 300 acres.<sup>16</sup> One can find in this no evidence of the fabled barons of colonial Virginia, but only of a well established class of small proprietors.

The York county books for the years from 1696 to 1701 tell the same story. Here we find recorded forty-one transfers and leases. Twenty-two are for 100 acres or less, 33 for 200 acres or less, and four, one for 1,400, one for 1,210, one for 600 and one for 550, are more than 300 acres in extent. The aggregate is 8,153 acres and the average 199.<sup>17</sup>

In the Rappahannock county records from 1680 to 1688 of fifteen land transfers taken at random from the books, the largest is 400 while the average is 168 acres.<sup>18</sup> Of the forty-eight transfers mentioned in the Essex county books for the years from 1692 to 1695, the largest is 600 acres and the smallest 50. Twenty are for 100 acres or less, 31 for 200 or less and only four for over 300.<sup>19</sup>

That conditions not fundamentally different prevailed in the early days of the colony is shown by the census taken of the landowners in 1626. Of the holdings listed no less than 25 were for 50 acres or less, 73 for 100 and most of the others for less than 300 acres. The total number of proprietors listed is 224 and the total acreage 34,472, giving an average for each plantation of 154 acres.<sup>20</sup>

It has been assumed by certain writers that the land grants

preserved in the Registrar's Office in Richmond tend to contradict this evidence. Although the average patent is by no means large, it is much more extensive than the typical land transfer. In 1638 this average was 423 acres, in 1640 it was 405, in 1642 it was 559, in 1645 it was 333, in 1648 it was 412, in 1650 it was 675. During the entire period from 1634 to 1650 inclusive the size of the average land grant was 446 acres. From 1650 to 1655 the average was 591 acres, from 1655 to 1666 six hundred and seventy-one, from 1666 to 1679 eight hundred and ninety acres, from 1679 to 1689 six hundred and seven acres, from 1689 to 1695 six hundred and one acres, from 1695 to 1700 six hundred and eighty-eight acres.<sup>21</sup> In the course of the entire second half of the Seventeenth century the average size of the patent was 674 acres.

Yet these facts have little direct bearing upon the extent of the plantations themselves. The system of granting land, as we have seen, was not based upon the individual needs of the planters, but upon the number of headrights presented to the Government. Obviously it was the question of the most economical method of transporting immigrants which would determine the average size of the grant. If it proved best to bring in servants in small groups, distributed among vessels devoted chiefly to merchandise, the patents would be small; if they came in on immigrant vessels, in numbers ranging from 50 to 200, the patents would be large.

Apparently both methods were in vogue. There are grants recorded varying in size from 50 acres to 10,000 acres.<sup>22</sup> Beyond doubt many merchants, finding that their vessels on the western voyage were not fully laden, from time to time took on a few indentured servants. If they furnished accommodation for from ten to twenty immigrants, they could demand, in addition to the sale of the indentures, 500 to 1,000 acres of land. It was a frequent practice, also, for planters in Vir-

ginia to send orders to their agents in England to procure and ship one or more servants as need for them arose.<sup>23</sup> "Your brother George hath moved you in his letters to send him over some servants the next year," wrote Richard Kemp to Robert Read in 1639.<sup>24</sup> Undoubtedly in cases of this kind the servants usually sailed in small parties upon the regular merchant vessels.

On the other hand it would appear that large numbers of persons arrived on strictly immigrant vessels, in which they made the chief if not the only cargo. Some of the best known men in the colony were dealers in servants and reaped from the business very large profits. Of these perhaps the best known in the earlier period was William Claiborne, celebrated for his dispute with the Maryland proprietors over the possession of Kent Island. Peter Ashton was another extensive dealer in servants, at one time receiving 2,550 acres for his headrights, at another 2,000. Isaac Allerton, Lewis Burwell, Giles Brent, Joseph Bridger and many others of like prominence are upon the patent rolls for large grants. The most inveterate dealer in servants, however, was Robert Beverley. This well known planter, so famous for his part in Bacon's Rebellion and in the political contests which grew out of it, is credited with patents aggregating 25,000 or 30,000 acres.<sup>25</sup>

Often partnerships were formed for the importation of servants, in which cases the patents were made out jointly. Among the more interesting are patents to Robert Beverley and Henry Hartwell, to Thomas Butt and Thomas Milner, to William Bassett and James Austin, to Thomas Blunt and Richard Washington. When associations of three or more persons were formed for the importation of servants, a not infrequent occurrence, the number of headrights is unusually large and the grants patented in consequence extensive. Thus

Edmund Bibbie and others are credited with 3,350 acres, Robert Ambrose and others with 6,000, George Archer and others with 4,000.<sup>26</sup>

It is clear, then, that the size of the average patent in the Seventeenth century is not an indication of the extent of the average plantation. If economic conditions were such as to encourage large holdings, extensive farms would appear regardless of the original patents, for the small proprietors would be driven to the wall by their more wealthy rivals and forced to sell out to them. On the other hand, if the large planters found it difficult to secure adequate labor they would of necessity have to break up their estates and dispose of them to the small freeholders. That the latter development and not the former actually took place in Virginia during the Seventeenth century a careful examination of the country records makes most apparent.

Over and over again in the records of various land transfers it is stated that the property in question had belonged originally to a more extensive tract, the patent for which was granted under the headright law. A typical case is that of John Dicks who purchased for 8,500 pounds of tobacco, "all the remaining part of 900 acres gotten by the transporting of 19 persons."<sup>27</sup> Similarly we find John Johnson in 1653 selling to Robert Roberts half of 900 acres which he had received by patent.<sup>28</sup> In 1693 John Brushood sold to James Grey 200 acres, a part of 5,100 acres originally granted to Mr. Henry Awbrey.<sup>29</sup> Such cases could be multiplied indefinitely.

Perhaps the most instructive instance left us of this development is the break up of a tract of land known as Button's Ridge, in Essex country. This property, comprising 3,650 acres, was granted to Thomas Button in the year 1666.<sup>30</sup> The original patentee transferred the entire tract to his brother Robert Button, who in turn sold it to John Baker. The lat-

ter, finding no doubt that he could not put under cultivation so much land, cut it up into small parcels and sold it off to various planters. Of these transactions we have, most fortunately, a fairly complete record. To Captain William Moseley he sold 200 acres, to John Garnet 600, to Robert Foster 200, to William Smither 200, to William Howlett 200, to Anthony Samuell 300, to William Williams 200. It is probable that he sold also a small holding to Henry Creighton, for we find the latter, in 1695, transferring to William Moseley 100 acres, formerly a part of Button's Ridge.<sup>31</sup>

Important as are these gleanings from the county records, we have at our disposal even better and more conclusive evidence that colonial Virginia was divided, not into baronial estates of vast proportions, but into a large number of comparatively small farms. Governor Nicholson's rent roll, which is published as an appendix to this volume, for the early years of the Eighteenth century at least, places the matter beyond doubt. Here we have before us an official inventory of all Virginia save the Northern Neck, giving the name of every proprietor and the number of acres in his possession.

It will be remembered that in the Crown colonies there was a perpetual obligation imposed upon all land when first granted known as the quit-rent. In Virginia this duty amounted to one shilling for every fifty acres, payable in tobacco at the rate of a penny per pound.<sup>32</sup> Despite the fact that some 27 per cent of the returns was consumed by the cost of collection, and that there were frequent frauds in disposing of the tobacco, the revenue derived from this source was of considerable importance.<sup>33</sup> The amount collected in 1705 was £1,841. i. 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ . When James Blair, the Virginia Commissary of the Bishop of London, petitioned William and Mary for a fund from the accumulated quit-rents for his proposed college at Williamsburg, some of the British governmental officials ob-

jected strenuously. "This sum is perhaps the only ready cash in all the plantations," it was declared, "which happens to be by good husbandry and is a stock for answering any emergency that may happen in Virginia."<sup>34</sup>

Throughout the entire Seventeenth century, however, the Governors had experienced great difficulty in collecting this tax. Over and over again they reported in their letters to the Board of Trade that there were large arrears of quit-rents which it was impossible to make the landowners pay.<sup>35</sup> The reason for this was obvious enough. In each county the tax collector was the sheriff. Although this officer was appointed by the Governor, he usually had a wholesome respect for the larger proprietors and in consequence was wary of giving offense by holding them to too strict an account of their estates.<sup>36</sup> At times the sheriffs themselves were the sufferers by this state of affairs, for they were held responsible for the rents upon all land patented in their counties, for which returns had not been made.

Although the Governors from time to time made rather feeble attempts to remedy the prevailing laxness in this matter, nothing of importance was accomplished before the first administration of Francis Nicholson. The chief executive himself had much need of the good will of the richer inhabitants, and he was not over forward in forcing them to bring in accurate returns. Nicholson, however, who prided himself on his executive ability and who was bent on breaking the power of the clique which centered around the Council of State, exerted himself to the utmost to secure full payment for every acre.

So early as 1690 we find him issuing orders to the sheriffs for the drawing up of an accurate rent roll, through an examination of the patent lists and the records of land transfers.<sup>37</sup> May 15, 1691, he took up the matter again, warning the sheriffs

that he expected more accurate returns than they had yet made.<sup>38</sup> With the appointment of Sir Edmund Andros as Governor, however, interest in the quit-rents lapsed, and not until his removal and the reappointment of Nicholson was the attempt resumed.

In July, 1699, Nicholson wrote the Commissioners of Trade and Plantations that he was doing his best to improve the quit-rents and that the auditor had been ordered to draw up a scheme for securing a more exact list of land holdings.<sup>39</sup> But for a while the matter still hung fire. The leading men in the Government were ready enough in making suggestions, but they were extensive landholders themselves and apparently rendered no real assistance. "I have considered those papers given me by your Excellency relating to a perfect rent roll," the auditor, William Byrd I wrote Nicholson, Oct. 21, 1703, "notwithstanding I have, according to your repeated directions used my utmost diligence in giving charge to sheriffs and taking their oaths to rolls, I am sensible there is still very great abuse therein."<sup>40</sup>

Despite these discouragements Nicholson persisted and in 1704 succeeded in obtaining the first really accurate rent roll of the colony. These lists have long been missing, and perhaps were destroyed in one of the several fires which have wrought so much havoc with the records of colonial Virginia, but a true copy was made by the clerk, William Robertson, and sent to the Board of Trade. Fortunately the British Government has been more careful of its priceless historical manuscripts than has Virginia, and this copy today reposes in the Public Record Office in London, a veritable treasure trove of information concerning economic and social conditions in the colony.<sup>41</sup>

Even a cursory examination of the rent roll is sufficient to dispel the old belief that Virginia at this time was the land

of the large proprietor. As one glances down the list of plantations he is struck by the number of little holdings, the complete absence of huge estates, the comparative scarcity even of those that for a newly settled country might be termed extensive. Here and there, especially in the frontier counties is listed a tract of four or five or even ten thousand acres, but such cases are very rare. In Middlesex county there is but one plantation of more than 2,500 acres, in Charles City county the largest holding is 3,130, in Nansemond 2,300, in Norfolk county 3,200, in Princess Anne 3,100, in Elizabeth City county 2,140, in York 2,750, in Essex 3,200.

On the other hand the rolls reveal the existence of thousands of little proprietors, whose holdings of from 50 to 500 acres embraced the larger part of the cultivated soil of the colony. Thus we find that in Nansemond, of 376 farms 26 were of 50 acres or less, 66 were between 50 and 100 acres, 110 between 100 and 200 acres, 88 between 200 and 400 acres, 78 between 400 and 1,000 acres, and only eight over 1,000 acres. In Middlesex county out of 122 holdings eleven were of 50 acres or less, 33 between 50 and 100 acres, 32 between 100 and 200 acres, 25 between 200 and 500 acres, 19 between 500 and 2,500 acres, one of 4,000 acres and one of 5,200 acres. Of the 94 plantations in Charles City county 26 were of 100 acres or less, 21 between 100 and 200 acres, 25 between 200 and 500 acres, 19 between 500 and 2,500 acres and three more than 2,500 acres.<sup>42</sup>

Although the average size of the plantations varied considerably in different counties it was everywhere comparatively small, far smaller than the average land grant of the time, far smaller than has been imagined by some of the closest students of the period. For Nansemond the rolls reveal the average holding as 212 acres, for James City county 400, for York 298, for Warwick 308, for Elizabeth City county 255,

for Princess Anne 459, for Gloucester 395, for Middlesex 406, for Charles City county 553.<sup>43</sup>

In the past few decades much has been written of the social life and customs of the people of colonial Virginia. But except in the able works of Dr. Philip Alexander Bruce little has been said concerning the small planter class, the men who made up the vast bulk of the population, the true Seventeenth century Virginians. We have long and detailed descriptions of the residences of the small group of the well-to-do, their libraries, their furniture, their table ware, their portraits, their clothing, their amusements. The genealogy of the leading families has been worked out with minute care, their histories recorded, some of their leading members idealized by the writers of fiction. The mention of colonial Virginia brings instantly to mind a picture of gay cavaliers, of stately ladies, of baronial estates, of noble manors. And the sturdy, independent class of small farmers who made up a full 90 per cent of the freeholders at the time the rent roll was taken, have been relegated into undeserved obscurity.

It is to be noted that the roll does not include the names of proprietors residing in the Northern Neck, as the peninsula between the Potomac and the Rappahannock is called. This territory, although acknowledging the jurisdiction of the Government at Williamsburg in most matters and sending representatives to the House of Burgesses, paid its quit-rents, not to the Crown but to a proprietor. Nicholson, therefore, was not concerned in their collection and took no steps to list its landholders in his new roll. There is no reason to believe, however, that conditions in that part of the colony were fundamentally different.

Nor can the accuracy of the rent roll be challenged. There existed always the incentive to make false returns, of course, in order to escape the payment of taxes, and not many sheriffs

were so diligent as the one in Henrico who unearthed 1,669 acres that had been "concealed."<sup>44</sup> Yet it must be remembered that the Governor brought to bear all the pressure at his disposal to make this particular roll accurate, that the sheriffs were his appointees, that they could not lightly defy him in so important a matter. And even though in isolated cases they may have winked at false returns from men of wealth and rank, from the mass of small proprietors they must have insisted upon reports as accurate as the records or actual surveying could make them. No doubt certain uncultivated tracts in the frontier counties were omitted, but with these we are not immediately concerned. For conditions in the older parts of the colony, where the slow evolution of economic factors had been at work for a century, the roll presents unimpeachable evidence that the bulk of the cultivated land was divided into small plantations.

But it still remains to prove that their owners were men of meagre fortunes, men who tilled the soil with their own hands. After all a farm of two or three hundred acres might give scope for large activities, the employment of many servants and slaves, the acquisition of some degree of wealth. Might it not be possible that though the acres of the planter were limited, his estate after all corresponded somewhat with the popular conception?

This leads us to a study of the distribution of servants and slaves among the planters. At the outset we are faced with convincing evidence that at the end of the Seventeenth century the average number for each farm was very small. This is shown by a comparison of the number of plantations listed in the rent roll of 1704 with the estimated number of workers. In the counties for which the sheriffs made returns for Governor Nicholson there were some 5,500 landholders. When to these is added the proprietors of the Northern Neck the

number must have approximated 6,500. If at this time the servants numbered 4,000, as seems probable,<sup>45</sup> and the slaves 6,000, together they would have averaged but 1.5 workers for each plantation. A decade earlier, when the use of slaves was still comparatively infrequent, the figure must have been still lower.

Fortunately we have even more direct and detailed evidence. Throughout almost all of Virginia colonial history one of the chief methods of raising revenue for the Government was the direct poll tax. This levy was laid, however, not only on every freeman over sixteen years of age, but upon male servants over 14, female servants who worked in the fields, and slaves above 16 of either sex, all of whom were officially termed tithables.<sup>46</sup> The tax rolls in which these persons were listed, some of which have been preserved among the county records, throw much light upon social and economic conditions in the colony.

In one district of Surry county we find in the year 1675 that there were 75 taxpayers and only 126 tithables. In other words only 51 persons in this district had this duty paid for them by others, whether parents, guardians or masters. And of the taxpayers, forty-two were liable for themselves alone, having no servants, slaves or dependent sons over 16; fifteen were liable for one other person, eight for two others, and only one, Lieutenant-Colonel Jordan, for so many as seven.<sup>47</sup>

In other districts the story is the same. In one there were forty taxpayers, 75 tithables and 25 persons who paid for themselves alone; in another 28 taxpayers, 62 tithables, fifteen who had no servants or slaves; in a third 48 taxpayers, 83 tithables, 28 who paid only for themselves, eleven who paid for two, five who paid for three; in a fourth district 29 taxpayers, 63 tithables, fourteen who had no servants or slaves; in a fifth 25 taxpayers, 45 tithables, 12 who paid only for

themselves.<sup>48</sup> Thus in Surry county in the year 1675 there were in all 245 taxpayers and 434 tithables. In other words the men who paid their own tax outnumbered all those whose tax was paid for them, whether servants, slaves or relatives, at the ratio of about 4 to 3.

A study of the records of the same county ten years later leads to almost identical results. At that time Surry seems to have been divided into four districts. In the first there were 78 taxpayers, 132 tithables, 30 persons who paid only for themselves; in the second, 63 taxpayers, 133 tithables, 33 persons who paid for themselves alone; in the third there were 38 taxpayers, 74 tithables and 22 persons paying only for themselves; in the fourth 125 taxpayers, 201 tithables and 81 persons having no dependents to pay for. Thus there were 540 tithables in all and 304 taxpayers. In the entire county there were about 122 persons who paid the poll tax for others. The largest holders of servants or slaves were Mr. Robert Randall with seven, Lieutenant-Colonel William Browne with nine, Mr. Robert Canfield with seven, Mr. Arthur Allen with six, Mr. William Edwards with six, Mr. Francis Mason with seven and Mr. Thomas Binns with eight.<sup>49</sup>

Here again is proof that the popular conception of the Virginia plantation life of the Seventeenth century is erroneous. Instead of the wealthy planter who surrounded himself with scores of servants and slaves, investigation reveals hundreds of little farmers, many of them trusting entirely to their own exertions for the cultivation of the soil, others having but one or two servants, and a bare handful of well-to-do men each having from five to ten, or in rare cases twenty or thirty, servants and slaves.

A further confirmation of these conclusions is to be had by comparing the number of plantations listed in the rent roll of 1704 with the official returns of tithables for 1702.<sup>50</sup> Thus in

Nansemond there were 375 plantations and 1,030 tithables, Henrico with 162 plantations had 863 tithables, Middlesex with 122 plantations had 814 tithables, Gloucester with 381 plantations had 2,626, James City with 287 plantations had 1,193, York with 205 plantations had 1,180, Warwick with 122 plantations had 505, Elizabeth City with 116 plantations had 478, Princess Anne with 215 plantations had 727, Surry with 273 plantations had 739, Isle of Wight with 262 plantations had 896, Norfolk with 303 plantations had 693, New Kent with 497 plantations had 1,245, King William with 217 plantations had 803, King and Queen with 403 plantations had 1,848, Essex with 376 plantations had 1,034, Accomac with 392 plantations had 1,041, Northampton with 258 plantations had 693, Charles City and Prince George together with 420 plantations had 1,327.<sup>51</sup>

In Nansemond the average number of tithables as compared with the number of plantations was 2.7, in Henrico 5.1, in Middlesex 6.7, in Gloucester 6.9, in James City 4.2, in York 5.7, in Warwick 4.1, in Elizabeth City 4, in Princess Anne 3.4, in Surry 2.7, in Isle of Wight 3.3, in Norfolk 2.3, in New Kent 2.5, in King William 3.7, in King and Queen 4.6, in Essex 2.8, in Accomac 2.6, in Northampton 2.3, in Charles City and Prince George combined 3.1. In all Virginia, with the exclusion of the Northern Neck, there were 19,715 tithables and some 5,500 plantations, an average of 3.6 tithables for each plantation. If we deduct from the tithables all the male freeholders included in the rent roll, there remains only some 14,700 persons south of the Rappahannock to make up the list, not only of servants and slaves, but of professional men, wage earners, artisans and dependent sons of landholders over 16 years of age.

Another invaluable source of information concerning the distribution of servants and slaves is provided by the numer-

ous inventories, deeds, and wills which have been preserved in the records. Thus in Surry during the years from 1671 to 1686 we find listed the estates of fifty-nine persons. Of these no less than fifty-two were apparently without servants or slaves; two, William Rooking and Captain Robert Spencer, had five each; one, Mr. William Chambers, had three; and four, Captain William Corker, John Hoge, Mr. John Goring and Samuel Cornell, had one each.<sup>52</sup>

In Elizabeth City of twenty-seven estates recorded during the years from 1684 to 1699 sixteen were without servants or slaves; of twenty-six recorded in York during the period from 1694 to 1697 thirteen had no servants or slaves; of twenty-three recorded in Henrico from 1677 to 1692 fourteen were without servants or slaves.<sup>53</sup> It is true that these inventories and wills, since they would usually pertain to persons of advanced age, perhaps do not furnish an absolutely accurate gauge of the average number of servants held by each planter. On the other hand, it is equally probable that a larger proportion of big estates than of the small found their way into the records. At all events it is evident that a goodly proportion of the landholders, perhaps sixty or sixty-five per cent possessed no slaves or indentured servants, and trusted solely to their own exertions for the cultivation of their plantations.

Thus vanishes the fabled picture of Seventeenth century Virginia. In its place we see a colony filled with little farms a few hundred acres in extent, owned and worked by a sturdy class of English farmers. Prior to the slave invasion which marked the close of the Seventeenth century and the opening of the Eighteenth, the most important factor in the life of the Old Dominion was the white yeomanry.

## *CHAPTER IV*

### FREEMEN AND FREEDMEN

IT is obvious that the small planter class had its origin partly in the immigration of persons who paid their own passage, partly in the graduation into freedmen of large numbers of indentured servants. But to determine accurately the proportion of each is a matter of great difficulty. Had all the records of Seventeenth century Virginia been preserved, it would have been possible, by means of long and laborious investigation, to arrive at strictly accurate conclusions. But with the material in hand one has to be satisfied with an approximation of the truth.

It must again be emphasized that the indentured servants were not slaves, and that at the expiration of their terms there was no barrier, legal, racial or social to their advancement. The Lords of Trade and Plantations, in 1676, expressed their dissatisfaction at the word "servitude" as applied to them, which they felt was a mark of bondage and slavery, and thought it better "rather to use the word service, since those servants are only apprentices for years."<sup>1</sup> "Malitious tongues have impaired it (Virginia) much," Bullock declared in 1649, "for it hath been a constant report among the ordinary sort of people that all those servants who are sent to Virginia are sold into slavery, whereas the truth is that the merchants who send servants and have no plantations of their own doe not only transferre their time over to others, but the servants serve no longer than the time they themselves agreed for in England, and this is the ordinary course in England, and no prejudice or hurt to the servant."<sup>2</sup>

The terms of indenture not only took for granted that the servant, upon completing his contract, would establish himself as a proprietor, but usually made it obligatory for the master to furnish him with the equipment necessary for his new life. With rare exceptions he received a quantity of grain sufficient to maintain him for one year; two suits, one of Kersey, the other of cotton; a pair of canvas drawers; two shirts; and one felt hat.<sup>3</sup> The historian Beverley states that to this outfit was added a gun worth twenty shillings.<sup>4</sup> Another writer tells us that the freedman received "a year's provision of corne, double apparel" and a supply of tools.<sup>5</sup>

There existed in England a widespread impression that the servant, upon securing his freedom, was entitled by law to fifty acres of land. This appears to have been a mistake arising from a misapprehension of the nature of the headright, which belonged not to the servant himself, but to the person who paid for his transportation. In many cases the indentures do not state the exact rewards to be received by the new freedman, but only that they are to accord with "the custom of the country," a very elastic term which could be construed by the master to suit his own interest.<sup>6</sup> John Hammond, in his *Leah and Rachel*, strongly advised the immigrant before affixing his signature to the indenture to insist upon the inclusion of a clause specifically providing for the payment of the fifty acres.<sup>7</sup> But the importance which attaches to this matter lies as much in the servant's expectation as in its fulfilment. Whether or not he received his little plantation, he believed that he was to get a tract of land, a very extensive tract it must have seemed to him, which would assure him a good living and make it possible for him to rise out of the class to which he belonged.<sup>8</sup>

In 1627 the Virginia General Court issued an order which is significant of the attitude of the colony itself to the freedmen. "The Court, taking into consideration that the next en-

sueing year there will be many tenants and servants freed unto whom after their freedom there will be no land due, whereby they may without some order taken to the contrary settle and seat themselves . . . have ordered that the Governor and Council may give unto the said servants and tenants leases for terms of years such quantities of land as shall be needful."<sup>10</sup> Thus, at this period at least, not only was it expected in the colony that servants would become land holders, but it was felt that for them not to do so was a matter of such grave concern as to require the special attention of the Government.

After all, however, the key to the situation must be sought in the history of tobacco culture and the tobacco trade. Tobacco was the universal crop of the colony and upon it every man depended for his advancement and prosperity. If the market was good and the price high, the planters flourished; if sales fell off and the price was low, they suffered accordingly. It is evident, then, that the ability of the freedman to secure a position of economic independence hinged upon the profit to be derived from his little tobacco crop. It does not matter whether he worked as a wage earner, tenant or freeholder, in the end the result would be the same. If the returns from his labor greatly exceeded his expenses, his savings would make it possible for him to establish himself firmly in the class of the colonial yeomanry. On the other hand, if he could wring from the soil no more than a bare subsistence, he would remain always a poor laborer, or perhaps be forced to seek his fortune in some other colony. Thus if we are to understand the status of the freed servant and the hope which he could entertain of advancement, it is necessary to turn our attention once more to economic conditions in the colony. First, we must determine the amount of tobacco the freedman could produce by his unassisted labor; second, the price he received for it; third, how much he had to give the

merchants in exchange for their wares; and finally, the margin of profit left after all expenses had been paid.

Despite a marked divergence of testimony regarding the amount of tobacco one man could cultivate, we are able to determine this matter with some degree of exactness. In 1627 the King, in outlining a plan to take into his own hands the entire tobacco trade, proposed to limit the imports to 200 pounds for each master of a family and 125 for each servant.<sup>10</sup> To this, however, the planters entered a vigorous protest, claiming that the quantity was "not sufficient for their maintenance." They in turn suggested that the King take a total of 500,000 pounds a year, which for a population of 3,000 meant 167 pounds for each inhabitant, or perhaps about 500 pounds for each actual laborer.<sup>11</sup> Again in 1634 it was proposed that the Crown purchase yearly 600,000 pounds of Virginia tobacco.<sup>12</sup> As the population of the colony at that date was about 5,000, this would have allowed only 120 pounds for each person, and once more the planters protested vigorously.<sup>13</sup> It would seem that both of these offers were based not so much upon the amount that one man could raise as upon the quantity which could be sold in England at a certain price. In fact it is probable that even so early as 1628 the average output of one freedman was not less than 1,000 pounds. It is interesting to note that in 1640, soon after Governor Francis Wyatt's arrival from England, it was found that the excessive crop of the previous year had so clogged the market that upon the advice of the merchants the Government was "forced to a strict way of destroying the bad and halfe the goode."<sup>14</sup>

The author of *A New Description of Virginia*, published in 1649, claims that one man could plant from 1,600 to 2,000 pounds a year.<sup>15</sup> As the pamphlet presents a somewhat optimistic picture of affairs in general in the colony, this estimate

must be taken with some reserve. More trustworthy is the statement of Secretary Thomas Ludwell in 1667 that 1,200 pounds was "the medium of men's yearly crops."<sup>16</sup>

At all events, it is evident that the planter, even when entirely dependent upon his own exertions, could produce a goodly crop. It is now necessary to ascertain what he got for it. In the second and third decades of the Seventeenth century the price of tobacco was very high. The first cargo, consisting of 20,000 pounds consigned in the George, sold for no less than £5,250, or 5s. 3d. a pound.<sup>17</sup> No wonder the leaders of the London Company were pleased, believing that in the Indian weed they had discovered a veritable gold mine! No wonder the settlers deserted their paliasses and their villages to seek out the richest soil and the spots best suited for tobacco culture! The man who could produce 200 pounds of the plant, after all freight charges had been met, could clear some £30 or £35, a very tidy sum indeed for those days. It was the discovery that Virginia could produce tobacco of excellent quality that accounts for the heavy migration in the years from 1618 to 1623. In fact, so rich were the returns that certain persons came to the colony, not with the intention of making it their permanent residence, but of enriching themselves "by a capp of Tobacco," and then returning to England to enjoy the proceeds.<sup>18</sup>

But this state of affairs was of necessity temporary. Very soon the increasing size of the annual crop began to tell upon the price, and in 1623 Sir Nathaniel Rich declared that he had bought large quantities of tobacco at two shillings a pound.<sup>19</sup> This gentleman felt that it would be just to the planters were they to receive two shillings and four pence for the best varieties, and sixteen pence for the "second sort." In the same year Governor Wyatt and his Council, in a letter to the Virginia Company, placed the valuation of tobacco at

eighteen pence a pound.<sup>20</sup> Three years later, however, the Governor wrote the Privy Council advising the establishment in Virginia of a "magazine" or entrepot, where the merchants should be compelled to take the tobacco at three shillings a pound.<sup>21</sup> This proposal did not seem reasonable to the King, and when Sir George Yeardley came over as Governor for the second time he was instructed to see to it that "the merchant be not constrained to take tobacco at 3. P. Pound in exchange for his wares," and to permit him to "make his own bargain."<sup>22</sup>

Apparently not discouraged by this rebuff, in 1628 the Governor, Council and Burgesses petitioned the King, who once more was planning to take the trade into his own hands, to grant them "for their tobacco delivered in the colony three shillings and six pence per pound, and in England four shillings."<sup>23</sup> This valuation undoubtedly was far in advance of the current prices, and King Charles, considering it unreasonable would not come to terms with the planters. In fact, it appears that for some years the price of tobacco had been declining rapidly. In May, 1630, Sir John Harvey wrote the Privy Council that the merchants had bought the last crop with their commodities at less than a penny per pound,<sup>24</sup> and two years later, in a statement sent the Virginia Commissioners, he claimed that the price still remained at that figure.<sup>25</sup>

It may be taken for granted, however, that this estimate was far below the actual price. The planters showed a decided tendency to blow hot or cold according to the purpose in view, and in these two particular statements Sir John was pleading for better treatment from the merchants. Yet it is reasonably certain that tobacco was at a low ebb in the years from 1629 to 1633, and sold at a small fraction of the figures of the preceding decade.<sup>26</sup> The Governor repeatedly wrote asking for relief, while in the Assembly attempts were made

to restore the market by restricting the size of the annual crop.<sup>27</sup>

Yet things must have taken a favorable turn soon after, for in 1634 the planters informed the King's Commissioners that they would not sell him their tobacco at less than six pence in Virginia and fourteen pence delivered in England.<sup>28</sup> Later the King wrote to the Governor and Council that the rate had recently "doubly or trebly advanced."<sup>29</sup> This is substantiated by the fact that the Commissioners, in 1638, allowed the planters "4d. a pound clear of all charges," despite which they complained that in an open market they could do better.<sup>30</sup>

In 1638 several prominent Virginians estimated that on an average during the preceding eleven years they had received not more than two pence for their tobacco, but here again it is probable that there was some exaggeration.<sup>31</sup> In 1649 the author of *A New Description of Virginia* stated that tobacco sold in Virginia for three pence a pound.<sup>32</sup> All in all it seems that prices in the early years of the settlement varied from five shillings to a few pence, that a disastrous slump occurred at the end of the third decade, followed by a rapid recovery which brought the rate to about three pence, at which figure it remained fairly constant for twenty-five years or more throughout the Civil War and most of the Commonwealth periods.

The return which the Virginia farmer received from his one staple crop was determined by a number of factors over which he himself had but little control. Had he been permitted to seek his own market and drive his own bargain free from the restraining hand of the British Government, no doubt he would have secured a much better price. But from the moment it became apparent that the Virginia tobacco rivalled in flavor that of the Spanish colonies and could command as ready a sale throughout Europe, the trade was sub-

jected to various regulations and restrictions which proved most vexatious to the colony and elicited frequent and vigorous protests. Neither James nor Charles had any idea of permitting free trade. In their prolonged struggle with the liberal party both saw in tobacco a ready means of aiding the Exchequer, and so of advancing toward the goal of financial independence. These monarchs were by no means hostile to Virginia. In fact, both took great interest in the tiny settlement upon the James, which they looked upon as the beginning of the future British colonial empire. Yet they lent too willing an ear to those who argued that tobacco might be made to yield a goodly revenue to the Crown without injury to the planters.

The policy adopted by the early Stuart kings and adhered to with but minor changes throughout the colonial period consisted of four essential features. First, the tobacco raised in the plantations should be sent only to England; second, upon entering the mother country it must pay a duty to the Crown; third, Spanish tobacco should be excluded or its importation strictly limited; lastly, the cultivation of the plant in England itself was forbidden.

In the years when the colony was still weak and dependent upon the mother country this program was not unfair. The prohibition of tobacco growing in England, however unnecessary it would have been under conditions of free trade, was felt by the planters to be a real concession, while the restrictions upon foreign importations saved them from dangerous competition at the very time when they were least able to combat it. Nor were they seriously injured by the imposition of the customs duties. The planters themselves imagined that the incidence of this tax fell upon their own shoulders and that they were impoverished to the full extent of the revenues derived from it. But in this they were mistaken. The duty, in

the last resort, was paid not by the planters but by the British consumers. The colonists were affected adversely only in so far as the enhanced price of tobacco in England restricted the market.

On the other hand, the prohibition of foreign trade was a very real grievance and elicited frequent protests from the planters. Dutch merchants paid high prices for the Virginia tobacco and offered their manufactured goods in return at figures far below those of the British traders. The Virginians could not understand why they should not take advantage of this opportunity. "I humbly desire to be informed from your honors," wrote Governor Harvey to the Virginia Commissioners in 1632, "whether there be any obstacle why we may not have the same freedome of his Majesties other subjects to seek our best market."<sup>33</sup>

But Harvey was attacking what already had become a fixed policy of the Crown, a policy which was to remain the cornerstone of the British colonial system for centuries. The Government had, therefore, not the slightest intention of yielding, and from time to time issued strict orders that all colonial tobacco, whether of Virginia or the West Indies, be brought only to England or to English colonies. When Sir William Berkeley was appointed Governor in 1642 he was instructed to "bee verry careful that no ships or other vessels whatsoever depart from thence, freighted with tobacco or other commodities which that country shall afford, before bond with sufficient securities be taken to his Majesty's use, to bring the same directly into his Majesty's Dominions and not elsewhere."<sup>34</sup>

Despite the insistence of the British Government in this matter, there is abundant evidence to show that the Virginians continued to indulge in direct trade with the continent for many years after the overthrow of the Company. In 1632 Governor Harvey wrote that "our intrudinge neighbours, the

Dutch, doe allow us eighteen peance p. pound" for tobacco, while a few months later we find him reporting the attempt of John Constable and others "to defraud his Majesty of his duties by unloading in the Netherlands."<sup>85</sup>

With the advent of the English Civil War and throughout the Commonwealth period Virginia enjoyed a large degree of independence and found it possible to trade with the Dutch almost with impunity. Even the strict Berkeley seems to have felt it no disloyalty for the planters to seek foreign markets for their staple while the mother country was torn by the contending armies of King and Parliament. And so the merchantmen of Flushing and Amsterdam pushed their prows into every river and creek in Virginia and Maryland, taking off large quantities of tobacco and giving in return the celebrated manufactured goods of their own country. At Christmas 1648, if we may believe the testimony of the author of *A New Description of Virginia*, there were trading in the colony ten ships from London, two from Bristol, seven from New England and twelve from Holland. In 1655 the statement was made that "there was usually found intruding upon the plantation divers ships, surruptitiously carrying away the growth thereof to foreign ports to the prejudice of this Commonwealth."<sup>86</sup>

Thus in the years prior to the Restoration Virginia was never fully subjected to the operation of the British colonial system. When the price of tobacco in the London market fell lower and lower, the planters might and often did find relief by defying the King's commands and trading directly with the Dutch.<sup>87</sup> And this benefitted them doubly, for not only did they strike a better bargain with the foreign traders, but every cargo of tobacco diverted from England tended to relieve the market there and restore prices. In fact there can be little doubt that the frequent violations of the trade re-

strictions of this period alone saved the colony from the poverty and distress of later days and made possible the prosperity enjoyed by the planters.

It must be noted also that of the tobacco sent to England itself, a part was reshipped to foreign countries. In 1610 a law was enacted for the refunding of all import duties upon articles that were re-exported. This drawback applied also to colonial products, but under Charles I an exception was made in their case and the privilege withdrawn. In consequence the importers made a vigorous protest in Parliament, and the King, in 1631, modified his policy by ordering that of the nine pence duty then in operation, six pence should be refunded when the tobacco was shipped abroad. In 1632 the drawback was increased to seven pence leaving the total duty paid by the merchants who traded through England to foreign countries two pence a pound only.<sup>38</sup> Although this constituted a most serious obstacle to trade and at times aroused the merchants to bitter protest, it by no means completely blocked re-exportation. So great were the natural qualifications of Virginia for producing tobacco, that it was possible to purchase a cargo from the planters on the James, proceed with it to London, pay there the two pence a pound duty, re-ship it to the continent and sell it there at a profit.<sup>39</sup> Although this trade was not extensive, it must have had an important influence in maintaining prices and in bringing prosperity to all classes in the colony.

Thus Virginia, contrary to the wishes of the mother country and in defiance of her regulations, enjoyed for its staple product in the years prior to 1660, a world market. Whether by direct trade or by re-exportation from England a goodly share of the annual crop was consumed in foreign countries, a share which had it been left in England to clog the market, would have reacted disastrously upon all concerned.

It is apparent, then, that in the first half century of its existence Virginia was the land of opportunity. The poor man who came to her shores, whether under terms of indenture or as a freeman, found it quite possible to establish himself as a person of some property and consideration. We may imagine the case of the servant who had completed his term and secured his freedom at any time during the third decade of the Seventeenth century. As we have seen, it was an easy matter for him to secure a small patch of land and the tools with which to cultivate it. By his unassisted efforts, if he applied himself steadily to the task, he could produce a good crop of tobacco, consisting perhaps of some 400 pounds. This he could sell to the merchants for from two shillings to six pence a pound, or a total of from £10 to £40.<sup>40</sup>

In the years from 1630 to 1640, when the price of tobacco seems to have stabilized itself at from two to three pence, cases of such extraordinary returns must have been of less frequent occurrence, but to some extent lower prices were offset by larger crops. If our freedman in 1635 could raise 800 pounds of leaf and dispose of it for four pence, his income would be £13.6.8; in 1649, by producing 1,000 pounds, he could sell it at three pence for £12.10.0. In fact, it is not too much to say that the average annual income from the labor of one able worker at any time prior to 1660 was not less than £12. When we take into consideration the fact that the planter produced his own food, and that out of the proceeds of his tobacco crop he paid only his taxes and his bills to the English importers, it is evident that he had a goodly margin of profit to lay aside as working capital.

It must not be forgotten, however, that this margin was greatly reduced by the high cost of clothing, farm implements and all other articles brought from across the ocean. The long and dangerous voyage from London to the Chesapeake

made the freight rates excessive, while the merchants did not scruple to drive a hard bargain whenever possible. The letters of the Governors are filled with complaints against the exactions of these men. "This year the Merchants have bought our tobacco with their commodities at less than a penny the pound," Harvey wrote in 1630, "and have not shamed to make the planters pay twelve pounds Sterlinc the tunn freight home."<sup>41</sup> Two years later he complained that a certain Captain Tucker had just sailed leaving his stores well stocked with goods, but with "instructions to his factors not to sell but at most excessive rates."<sup>42</sup> In 1628, the Governor, Council and Burgesses, in a petition to the King, declared that for years they had "groaned under the oppression of unconscionable and cruel merchants by the excessive rates of their commodities."<sup>43</sup> Six years later Governor Harvey stated that all things which "come hither" are sold at "thrice the value they cost in England."<sup>44</sup>

It is obvious, however, that after all expenses had been paid, a goodly margin of profit was left, a margin perhaps averaging some three or four pounds sterling. The provident and industrious immigrant, a few years after the conclusion of his term, might well lay aside enough to make it possible for him in turn to secure a servant from England. This accomplished, he at once rose into the class of employers and his future advance was limited only by his capabilities and his ambition.

We would naturally expect to find, then, that during these years a large percentage of those who came to the colony under terms of indenture, sooner or later acquired land, perhaps bought servants, and became persons of some standing in the colony. Certainly the opportunity was theirs. It will be interesting therefore to study the early records in order to glean what evidence we may concerning this matter. If the servants graduated in any appreciable numbers into the planter

class, the patents, wills, inventories, land transfers and muster rolls could hardly fail to yield some evidence of the fact.

Turning first to the earliest period, we find that of the laborers who were imported by the London Company to cultivate the public lands, a fair proportion became proprietors and were regarded by later comers with especial esteem as "ancient planters." At the termination of their service they were granted 100 acres and when this was fully cultivated received another tract of the same extent. To the apprentices bound out to tenants even more liberal treatment was accorded, for they were provided with a year's store of corn, a house, a cow, clothing, armor, household utensils, farm tools and as much land as they could till.<sup>45</sup>

The guiding hand of the Company was missed by the freedmen after the revoking of the charter, for the Governors seem to have left them to shift for themselves. Yet this fact did not prevent many from forging ahead, acquiring land, and in some cases positions of trust in the Government itself. In Hotten's *Immigrants* is published a muster roll for the year 1624 of all the settlers in Virginia, in which servants are carefully distinguished from freemen.<sup>46</sup> By following, as well as the imperfect records of the period permit, the after careers of the former, it is possible to determine with a fair degree of accuracy to what extent the small farmer class at this period was recruited from persons coming to the colony under terms of indenture.

Of the forty-four Burgesses who sat in the Assembly of 1629, no less than seven—John Harris, William Allen, William Popleton, Anthony Pagett, Richard Townsend, Adam Thoroughgood and Lionell Rowlston—were listed as servants in the muster of 1624.<sup>47</sup> Thus some sixteen per cent of this important body, the Virginia House of Commons, at this time was made up of men who five years previously had been work-

ing out their passage money. Among the thirty-nine members of the House of 1632, six appear as servants in the muster—Thomas Barnett, Adam Thoroughgood, Lionell Rowlston, Thomas Crump, Roger Webster and Robert Scotchmon. Whether there were other members who came over under terms of indenture but secured their freedom before 1624, we have no means of determining.

The author of *Virginia's Cure*, published in 1662, asserted that the Burgesses "were usual such as went over as servants thither; and though by time, and industry, they may have obtained competent estates, yet by reason of their poor and mean condition, were unskilful in judging of a good estate, either of church or Commonwealth."<sup>48</sup> This statement is a gross exaggeration both as to the composition of the Burgesses and their abilities. Instances of the election of freedmen to the House, fairly frequent in the early years of the colony, became rarer as the century advanced and the field of selection widened. Yet in the Assembly of 1652, of the thirty-five members, eight or nine appear on the patent rolls as headrights brought over by others.<sup>49</sup> It is evident that even so late as the middle of the century the door of opportunity was still open to the freedmen.

In the absence of a complete census for the decades after 1624, it is very difficult to determine what proportion of the servants listed in the muster roll of that year subsequently became landowners. Some light is thrown on the matter by a search through the patent books. Here are found a surprisingly large number of persons who in 1624 were servants. Among these are Anthony Jones, John Sparkes, John Cooke, Roger Delk, John Trussell, William Woolritch, Pettyplace Cloyse, Edward Sparshott, William Dawson, Richard Bell, Robert Browne, Nicholas Browne, John Chandler, Lionell Rowlston, Thomas Savadge, Samuel Bennett, Daniel Shurley,

James Hatfield, Adam Thoroughgood, John Robinson, John Hill, John Seaward, William Ramshaw, Samuel Weaver, John Upton, John Watson, Thomas Crompe and John Russell.<sup>50</sup>

Of these persons several acquired a fair degree of wealth and became of importance in the early life of the colony. It is interesting to note also, that some were men of good condition in England, the case of Adam Thoroughgood, whose brother Sir John Thoroughgood was at one time secretary to the Earl of Pembroke, is notable in this respect. John Hill, before coming to Virginia, had been a book binder in Oxford university, and his father had been a fletcher.<sup>51</sup> The patents of Thomas Crompe and John Russell state that fifty acres was due in each case for the "personal adventure" of the patentee, but since they are distinctly listed as servants in 1624 it seems probable that subsequently each made a visit to England and put in claims for the headright for the return voyage.<sup>52</sup>

Thus it is evident that a large proportion of the landholders during and prior to 1635 had come to the colony under terms of indenture, either under the Company or with private individuals. Perhaps it would not be unfair to estimate this proportion at from thirty to forty per cent, but it must be distinctly understood that the matter cannot be determined with any degree of accuracy or finality. Some years later Governor Berkeley in an address before the Assembly, stated that hundreds of examples testified to the fact that no man in Virginia was denied the opportunity to rise and to acquire both property and honor.<sup>53</sup> Careful research tends to corroborate this assertion but it does not and cannot show whether the bulk of the early planters came to the colony as freemen or as indentured servants.

During the years from 1635 to 1660 the process of building up a class of small farmers in large part from freedmen continued unabated. But the difficulties of the investigator in

studying this period are also very great. Yet it is possible, by examining the names that appear in the land patents and wills, and comparing them with the list of headrights, to arrive at fairly satisfactory results. We find that of the 131 persons listed in the York county wills from 1646 to 1659 no less than twenty-five appear as headrights for others. Of these the major part became landowners, some of them men of influence in Virginia.<sup>54</sup> The Rappahannock wills for the years from 1656 to 1664 show a like result. Thirty-nine persons appear in the records, of whom seven came in as headrights.<sup>55</sup>

There is always the possibility of error in identifying these persons for the recurrence of such names as Smith, Jones, Turner, Davis, Hall, the monotonous repetition of a few common given names, and the universal omission of middle names add greatly to our difficulties. Moreover, mistakes are apt to occur because of the transfer of headrights by sale. The free immigrant to whom was due fifty acres for his "personal adventure" might not care to settle on the frontier where alone unpatented land could usually be found. At times he sold his right and purchased a plantation in some one of the older and more advanced counties. It is not conclusively proved, then, that a certain person came as a servant merely because he is listed as a headright. On the other hand, the fact that it was the custom to set forth such transfers clearly in the patent itself, justifies the conclusion that in the cases where no statement of the kind is made, the headright for which the land was granted usually came in under terms of indenture.

In Volume III of the land patents are listed in the years from 1635 to 1653 patents to fifty-seven persons in James City county.<sup>56</sup> Of these no less than thirty-one are found also as headrights belonging to others, although a duplication of names in several cases makes identification uncertain. One

person only claimed the fifty acres for having paid his own passage to Virginia. When all possible allowance is made for transfers of rights it is obvious that at this time freedmen were still entering freely into the class of landowners.

An examination of the James City county patents in Volume IV, covering the years from 1653 to 1663, leads to similar results, for of the eighty-five names which appear there, forty-five are listed as headrights belonging to others. And although the tracts granted these men were usually small in size, in certain cases they were far in excess of the average plantation. Thus Edward Cole, who appears as a headright in 1642, patented 900 acres in 1655;<sup>57</sup> Thomas Warburton patented 1,664 acres;<sup>58</sup> George Gilbert 1,000 acres; Francis Burwell 1,000 and John Underwood 2,000 acres.<sup>59</sup> The number of years which elapsed between the listing of the headrights and the granting of the patents varied from two to twenty-eight. The average for the thirty-five cases in which the dates are given is twelve years. As the claims for headrights were often made long after the actual arrival of the servant, it may be assumed that the average was even greater than this. Once more, however, it must be remembered that these lists do not record personal transfers of land, while it is quite certain that many freedmen, instead of patenting unoccupied tracts, secured their little farms by purchase. Some probably became proprietors in the very first year of their freedom and set to work with hoe and plow to wrest their living from the soil.

In the patent rolls the bulk of the headrights are alluded to simply as "persons," leaving it undecided whether those included in the various lists are freemen or servants. But occasionally the newcomers are specifically described as "servants," in which case, of course, there can be no doubt whatever as to their status. By selecting at random a number of names from those so termed, avoiding for convenience sake

all Smiths, Joneses and others the frequent recurrence of whose names would make identification difficult, it is possible to arrive at definite conclusions by following, as best we can, their careers in after life. With this in view we have made up the following list of servants: Henry Arnetrading, George Archer, Sylvester Atkins, Nicholas Atwell, Edward Ames, John Aram, Robert Arnall, Peter Asheley, William Baldwin, Edward Burt, Francis Baile, John Bauchees, John Bishop, John Blackstone, Anthony Box, Michael Brichley, Peter Buck, William Burcher, John Causey, Robert Chesheire, Thomas Chilcott, Thomas Clayton, Annanias Coplestone, James Courtney, Thomas Cropp, Thomas Connagrave, John Day, John Dodman, Jonathan Ellison, Edward Eastwood, James Fletcher, Thomas Foanes, John Fouke, Francis Francklin, Armstrong Foster, Robert Fossett, John Farr, Robert Garsell, George Gilbert, Henry Giles, Hector Godbear, Francis Gray, Reginald Griffin, Thomas Halcock, Thomas Hand, Henry Hartwell, Hugh Hayes, John Hedler, Richard Huett, John Hodgbins, John Holdin, William Hankinson, John Hether, Lazarus Manning, Thomas Pattison, John Pullapin, Sampson Robins, George Walton, Francis Withers, Robert Webstie and Thomas Warden. A search through the patent rolls, wills, tithable lists and other data found in the records of the period, has led to the more or less positive identification of fifteen of these persons.

John Bishop, who was transported by Thomas Gray, became a man of influence and means. He represented Charles City county in the House of Burgesses in the sessions of 1644, 1652 and 1653, and was variously known as Captain Bishop or Mr. Bishop.<sup>60</sup> Although he became a landowner so early as 1638,<sup>61</sup> his family arrived from England only in 1651. Francis Gray, brought to Virginia at the age of fifteen by Joseph Johnson, also became prominent, securing a

seat in the Assembly and acquiring a fair estate. In 1653 he took up 750 acres in Charles City county, while ten years later he is credited with 374 acres more in Westmoreland.<sup>62</sup> His will was recorded in 1667.<sup>63</sup>

George Archer became an extensive landowner, patenting 250 acres in 1663, 550 acres in 1665, 784 acres in 1671 and 1,395 acres in 1673.<sup>64</sup> In 1691 he received, in conjunction with others, title to a tract of 2,827 acres in Henrico.<sup>65</sup> John Holding patented in York county 850 acres in 1649 and 389 acres in 1653.<sup>66</sup> William Baldwin, who came in the Plaine Joan when he was twenty-four years of age, received three grants of land, one for 600 acres in York county, one for 67 acres in Isle of Wight, and one, in conjunction with Richard Lawrence, for 300 in Rappahannock.<sup>67</sup>

Thomas Pattison, transported by Francis Epes in 1635, took up in Lancaster two tracts, one for 200 acres and one for 400.<sup>68</sup> He also became part owner of two more tracts, one for 220 acres and the other for 504.<sup>69</sup> John Dodman secured a patent for 350 acres in Westmoreland in the year 1662.<sup>70</sup> Thomas Warden is mentioned as a landowner in James City county in 1643.<sup>71</sup> George Gilbert, transported in 1635 by Joseph Johnson, took up fifty acres in James City county in 1643.<sup>72</sup> In 1663, in partnership with Richard Scruely, he patented 1,000 acres in the same county north of the Chickahominy river.<sup>73</sup> John Blackstone acquired two tracts, one for 100 acres and the other for 151 acres,<sup>74</sup> while William Burcher received a grant for 300 acres.<sup>75</sup>

Several of these men who came as servants to the Eastern Shore are found in succeeding years among the yeomanry of Accomac and Northampton. Henry Arnetrading, Armstrong Foster, William Burcher and Sampson Robins were signers of the Northampton submission to the Commonwealth in 1652.<sup>76</sup> Henry Arnetrading was the owner of 300 acres of land.<sup>77</sup>

Armstrong Foster was the official tobacco viewer for Hungers, a position entailing no little responsibility.<sup>78</sup> Sampson Robins received a patent for a tract of land in Northampton in 1655.<sup>79</sup> Thomas Clayton is listed among the Northampton tithables of 1666.<sup>80</sup>

In the case of John Day some uncertainty arises. Apparently there were two men of this name in the colony, one transported by John Slaughter, and the other not only paying for his own passage, but for that of a servant as well.<sup>81</sup> A John Day later secured 400 acres in Gloucester county,<sup>82</sup> but whether it was the one who had come as a servant or the one who had entered the colony as a freeman, apparently there is no way of ascertaining.

All in all the story of these men tends to confirm the conclusions hitherto arrived at. It must be remembered that the mortality among the servants in the tobacco fields in the early days of the colony was extremely heavy. It is not improbable that of our sixty-one servants, twenty or more succumbed before the completion of their first year. That of the remaining forty-one, fourteen or fifteen established themselves as solid farmers, while several became men of influence in the colony, is a striking proof that at this period many freedmen had the opportunity to advance. Taking it for granted that the records of some of the sixty-one have been lost, or that our research has failed to reveal them, we once more come to the conclusion that a full thirty or forty per cent of the land-owners of the period from 1635 to 1666 came to the colony under terms of indenture.

On the other hand, it is equally positive that the class of poor planters was recruited in part from free immigrants, men who paid their own passage across the ocean and at once established themselves as freeholders. Of this too, the records furnish ample testimony. Thus in 1636 we find that

Richard Young was granted 100 acres in Warwick "due him for his personal adventure and for the transportation of his wife Dorothy Young."<sup>83</sup> A year later Roger Symonds received 100 acres in Charles City "due him for the transportation of his wife, Alice, and one servant, Richard Key."<sup>84</sup> Similarly in May 1636, Thomas Wray was allowed 50 acres for his "personal adventure." Such cases could be multiplied indefinitely.<sup>85</sup>

A careful analysis of the patent rolls from 1623 to July 14, 1637, published in the *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* for April, 1901, shows conclusively that the lists contain the names of many persons who at no time were under terms of indenture. Of the 2,675 names appearing in the records, the editor states that 336 are positively known to have come over as freemen, many of them being heads of families. "There are 245 persons whose names do not occur as headrights and yet of whom it is not positively shown that they were freemen, though the probability seems to be that by far the greater number were. And there were 2,094 persons whose transportation charges were paid by others. This last number includes some negroes, all those specifically termed 'servants' and all others. . . . It would probably be a fair estimate to say that of the names represented in the patents cited, there were about 675 free men, women and children who came to Virginia and about 2000 servants and slaves."<sup>86</sup> Similarly in the issue of the magazine for January, 1902, the editor says that "for some years, about this period, it is probable (from the best calculations which can be made) that seventy-five per cent of the emigrants to Virginia were indentured servants."<sup>87</sup>

There seems to be no reason to doubt the accuracy of these conclusions. Certainly any study of immigration to Virginia in the Seventeenth century is woefully incomplete if it fails to take into consideration the very considerable proportion of

free settlers. On the other hand, it is probable that a similar study of the lists for a later date would show a smaller percentage of freemen. However this may be, it is evident that by far the larger part of the newcomers at all periods must have been indentured servants intended for service in the tobacco fields. In 1638 Richard Kemp wrote Secretary Windesbanke that "of hundreds which are yearly transported, scarce any but are brought in as merchandise to make sale of."<sup>88</sup>

Yet it must not be forgotten that any immigration of poor freemen, however small, would have a very marked influence upon the formation of the small farmer class. Of the host of servants a certain proportion only, a proportion probably less than fifty per cent, could hope even in the most favorable times to become freeholders. If they survived the hardships and dangers of the service with their masters, it still remained for them to acquire property and win for themselves a place in the life of the colony. And to accomplish this they must display determination, intelligence, industry and thrift, qualities by no means universal among the classes in England from which the servants were chiefly drawn. But for the free immigrant there need be no period of probation. He might at once purchase his farm, erect his home, secure all necessary tools and put out his crop of tobacco. And whereas the servant usually found it possible to maintain a family only after many years of hard work, perhaps not at all, the free settler often married before leaving England and brought his wife and children with him.

In conclusion it may be said that in the first fifty years of the colony's existence conditions were very favorable for the graduation of the servant into the class of small freeholders, that the records amply prove that many succeeded in doing so, but that at this period a fair proportion of free immigrants also came to the colony. Before the expiration of the Com-

monwealth period was formed from these two sources, perhaps in not unequal proportions, a vigorous, intelligent, independent yeomanry, comprising fully 90 percent of all the landowners.

## *CHAPTER V*

### THE RESTORATION PERIOD

THE people of Virginia hailed the Restoration with unaffected joy. Not only did they anticipate that the termination of the long period of civil war and unrest in England would react favorably upon their own prosperity, but they felt that Sir William Berkeley's well known loyalty and his action in proclaiming Charles II immediately after the execution of his father, might assure them the King's especial favor now that he at last had come into undisputed possession of his throne. They were doomed to bitter disappointment, however, for the Restoration brought them only hardship and suffering, discontent and rebellion.

No sooner had the royal Government been safely installed than it set to work to perfect and to enforce the colonial policy which in principle had been accepted from the first. The ties which united the colonies with the mother country were strengthened, those which gave them a common interest with foreign nations in so far as possible were snapped. The British empire was to become a unit, closely knit by economic bonds and presenting to all other nations a hostile front. With this in view Parliament passed a series of Navigation Acts, under which the trade of the colonies was regulated for many years to come.

It is necessary for us to enquire, therefore, into the effects of these laws upon the tobacco trade, for tobacco, as we have seen, was the key to the prosperity of the colony, and favorable economic conditions alone could make it possible for the newcomer to establish himself as a member of the Virginia

yeomanry. If the strict enforcement of the Navigation Acts should bring low prices for tobacco and wipe out the margin of profit for the man who tilled the soil with his own hands, not only would the small planter class not expand, but might actually decline in numbers.

There were three main features of the colonial legislation of Parliament during this period, all of them interrelated and all tending toward the one great object of keeping the English plantations for the English. It was provided that the chief colonial products such as tobacco and sugar should be sent only to England or to English colonies, that the colonies should with few exceptions import goods only from British territory, that all products taken to or from any colony should be conveyed only in English vessels manned by crews composed mainly of Englishmen.

In committing itself to this policy the royal Government felt that the plantations would play a useful and necessary part in the great system which was planned, and in so doing would find prosperity. It had been the hope of the English people that their colonies would produce the articles which were so badly needed by the mother country to revive her waning industry and permit a greater measure of economic independence. Although more than half a century had passed since the first foothold had been gained upon the American continent, this expectation was as far from realization as ever. The colonies, from Massachusetts to Barbados were producing, not the articles which England especially needed, but those for which they had the greatest natural aptitude, especially tobacco and sugar. And these staples they sent, not to England alone, but to various foreign countries as well.

In short the vision of a closely knit, self-sustaining empire, the vision which had been in men's minds for many decades before the founding of Jamestown, seemed to have proved

delusive. The colonies were developing interests and commercial connections hostile to those of the mother country, were nourishing the manufactures and shipping of foreign nations almost as much as those of England. And this the Government at London would not tolerate. The colonial trade with strangers must come to an end. If Virginia and Maryland produced more tobacco than the English market could absorb, they could find ready relief by turning their energies into other channels. Let them furnish the old country with pig iron or potash or silk or ship-stores and they would find ready and eager purchasers. So reasoned the English, and as their views were backed by the mandates of Crown and Parliament, the colonists were forced to submit. If they could fit themselves into the system prescribed for them, all would be well and good; if they found this impossible, they would have to suffer without hope of redress.

And suffer Virginia did for a full quarter of a century. The tobacco of the Chesapeake bay colonies had long since reached the point where it required a world market. If confined to England alone, only a fraction of the output could be consumed and disaster was certain. It was well enough for the Government to restrict the importation of Spanish leaf and to prohibit the planting of tobacco in England, these regulations could do no more than give the colonists undisputed possession of the home market, and the home market was not enough. This point seems to have been ignored by those writers who have contended that the strict enforcement of the British colonial system in itself entailed no hardship upon the tobacco colonies.

"It is obvious that any criticism of England's regulation of the colonial tobacco trade, which is based on a laissez-faire social philosophy," says George Lewis Beer, in *The Old Colonial System*, "is equally applicable to the arrangement by

means of which the tobacco planter secured exclusive privileges in the home market."<sup>1</sup> Yet it is certain that the tobacco growers of England could never have competed with Maryland and Virginia had there been free trade. The prohibition of planting in the old country was necessary only because of the tariff, varying from 200 per cent in 1660 to 600 per cent in 1705, upon the colonial product. And though the exclusion of Spanish tobacco was a more real benefit, for the Spaniard produced varieties unknown in Virginia, there is exaggeration here also. This is clearly shown by the fact that at the end of the Seventeenth century England was sending millions of pounds of her colonial tobacco to Spain itself.<sup>2</sup> The leaf was brought from Virginia and Maryland, forced to pay a duty of about fifty per cent, and re-exported to the Spanish ports, where it found a ready sale. Had there been free exchange of commodities, the English colonies would have sold to Spain more tobacco than the Spanish colonies to England.

"In truth the loss of the foreign market was a terrible disaster. In framing the Navigation Acts it was not the intention of the Government to stop entirely the flow of tobacco to the continent of Europe, but to divert it from the old channels and make it pass through England. It was therefore provided that in case the leaf was shipped out again to foreign ports, all the duties, except one half of the Old Subsidy, should be withdrawn."<sup>3</sup> The remaining half penny, however, amounted to forty or fifty per cent of the original cost of the goods, and proved at first an almost insuperable barrier to the European trade. Moreover, the shortage of ships which resulted from the exclusion of the Dutch merchants, the expense of putting in at the English ports, the long and troublesome procedure of reshipping, all tended to discourage the merchants and hamper re-exportation.

We may take for granted also that the resentment of Hol-

land at the Navigation Acts, which struck a telling blow at her maritime prestige, played an important part in blocking foreign trade. The Dutch had been the chief European distributors of the Virginia and Maryland tobacco, and if they refused to take it, now that it could be secured only in England, it would pile up uselessly in the London warehouses. They understood well enough that the half penny a pound duty was a tribute levied upon them by their most dangerous rival. It is not surprising that instead of bowing to the new restrictions, they sought to free their trade entirely from dependence on British tobacco, by fostering the cultivation of the plant in their own country.

The colonists found an able defender in the merchant John Bland. In a Remonstrance addressed to the King this man set forth with remarkable clearness the evils which would result from the Navigation Acts, and pleaded for their repeal. The Hollander was already beginning to plant tobacco, he said, and would soon be able to supply all his needs at home. "Will he, after accustomed to the tobacco of his own growth," he asked, "ever regard that which is in Virginia? Will he ever afterwards be induced to fetch it thence, when he finds his profit nigher at home? Will he ever buy that of us, when by passing so many hands, and so much charge contracted thereon, is made so dear, that he can have it cheaper in his own territories? (Surely no.) Therefore it clearly appears, that being so, of necessity we must lose that Trade and Commerce."

"If the Hollanders must not trade to Virginia, how shall the Planters dispose of their Tobacco? The English will not buy it, for what the Hollander carried thence was a sort of tobacco not desired by any other people, nor used by us in England but merely to transport for Holland. Will it not then perish on the Planters hands? . . . Can it be believed that

from England more ships will be sent than are able to bring thence what tobacco England will spent? If they do bring more, must they not lose thereby both stock and Block, principle and charges? The tobacco will not vend in England, the Hollanders will not fetch it from England; what must become thereof? . . . Is not this a destruction to the commerce? For if men lose their Estates, certainly trade cannot be encreased."<sup>8</sup>

The enforcement of the trade laws was indirectly the cause of still another misfortune to the colonies, for the two wars with Holland which grew out of it reacted disastrously upon their trade. In fact, on each occasion the small stream of tobacco which had trickled over the dam of restrictions into foreign countries was for a time almost entirely cut off. Not only did the tobacco exports to Holland itself come to an end, but the Dutch war vessels played havoc with the trade between England and other countries and even between England and her colonies.

The loss of their foreign exports was calamitous to the planters. Had the demand for tobacco been more elastic, the consequences might not have been so fatal, for declining prices would have stimulated consumption and made it possible for England to absorb most of the output. But the duty kept up the price and the result was a ruinous glut in the English market. Tobacco sufficient for a continent poured into the kingdom, where since the normal outlet was blocked by the half penny a pound on re-exported leaf, it piled up uselessly.

The effect upon prices was immediate. The planters were forced to take for their crops half of what they had formerly received and had reason for rejoicing if they could dispose of it at all. In 1662 Governor Berkeley and other leading citizens stated that the price of tobacco had fallen so low that it would not "bear the charge of freight and customs, answer the adventure, give encouragement to the traders and sub-

sistence to the inhabitants.”<sup>9</sup> In 1666 Secretary Thomas Ludwell told Lord Arlington that tobacco was “worth nothing.”<sup>10</sup> Later in the same year the planters complained that the price was so low that they were not able to live by it.<sup>11</sup> “For the merchants, knowing both our necessities and the unconsumable quantities of tobacco we had by us,” they said, “gave us not the twentieth part of what they sold it for in England.”<sup>12</sup> Tobacco had so glutted the markets, it was declared, and brought the planter so small a return, that he could “live but poorly upon it.” In fact, the merchants in 1666 had left the greater part of the two preceding crops upon their hands.<sup>13</sup>

“Twelve hundred pounds of tobacco is the medium of men’s crops,” wrote Secretary Ludwell to Lord John Berkeley in 1667, “and half a penny per pound is certainly the full medium of the price given for it, which is fifty shillings out of which when the taxes . . . shall be deducted, is very little to a poor man who hath perhaps a wife and children to cloath and other necessities to buy. Truly so much too little that I can attribute it to nothing but the great mercy of God . . . that keeps them from mutiny and confusion.”<sup>14</sup> The following year he wrote in similar vein. The market was glutted; a third of the planters’ tobacco was left on their hands; the rest sold for nothing.<sup>15</sup>

The Governor and Council declared that the merchant “allows not much above a farthing a pound for that which the planter brings to his door. And if there shall be any amongst us who shall be able to ship his tobacco on his own account, it will be at such a rate as the tobacco will never repay him, since they are inforced to pay from £12 to £17 per ton freight, which usually was but at seven pounds.”<sup>16</sup> “A large part of the people are so desperately poor,” wrote Berkeley in 1673, “that they may reasonably be expected upon any small ad-

vantage of the enemy to revolt to them in hopes of bettering their condition by sharing the plunder of the colony with them."<sup>17</sup> That matters had not changed in 1681 is attested by the statement of the Council that the impossibility of disposing of their tobacco without a heavy loss overwhelmed both Virginia and Maryland, and brought upon them a "vast poverty and infinite necessity."<sup>18</sup> "The low price of tobacco staggers the imagination," Lord Culpeper wrote to Secretary Coventry, "and the continuance of it will be the speedy and fatal ruin of this noble Colony."<sup>19</sup>

These distressing conditions bore with telling weight upon the small planters. The margin of profit which formerly had made it possible for the freedman to advance rapidly was now wiped out entirely and the poor man found it impossible to keep out of debt. In 1668 Secretary Ludwell declared that no one could longer hope to better himself by planting tobacco.<sup>20</sup> Eight years later Nathaniel Bacon, in justifying his rebellion declared that the small farmers were deeply in debt and that it was "not in the power of labor or industry" to extricate them.<sup>21</sup> "The poverty of Virginia is such," said a certain John Good in 1676, "that the major part of the inhabitants can scarce supply their wants from hand to mouth, and many there are besides can hardly shift without supply one year."<sup>22</sup> In 1673 the Governor and Council reported that of the planters, "at least one third are single persons (whose labor will hardly maintain them) or men much in debt," who might reasonably be expected to revolt to the Dutch upon any small advantage gained by them.<sup>23</sup> In 1680 they again reported that "the indigency of the Inhabitants is such that they are in noe manner capacitated to support themselves."<sup>24</sup> Three years later they wrote that "the people of Virginia are generally, some few excepted, extremely poor, not being able to provide against the pressing necessities of their families."<sup>25</sup>

Despite this repeated and explicit testimony of the misery and poverty of the colony during this period, which resulted from the stagnation of the tobacco market after the passage of the Navigation Acts, the surprising statement is made by Mr. George Lewis Beer, in *The Old Colonial System*, that England's trade restrictions had nothing to do with Bacon's Rebellion. "It has been at various times contended," he says, "that the uprising was, in part at least, one against the laws of trade and navigation. If there had existed in Virginia any widespread and well defined feeling of antagonism to these laws, it would unquestionably have found expression in the county grievances. Most of these reports were drawn up in a number of articles, and in all there were nearly two hundred of such separate subdivisions, yet only three of this number refer in any way to these statutes. There is no valid reason for assuming that the commercial system played any part whatsoever, or was in any degree, an issue, in the upheaval of 1676."<sup>22</sup>

If by this statement it is meant that Bacon and his men did not rebel in order to force the repeal of the Navigation Acts, or even that they did not have the acts in mind at the time, there are many students of Virginia history who will agree with it. But if Mr. Beer means that these laws, with their baleful effect upon the prosperity of Virginia, did not produce the conditions fundamental to the rising, he is certainly wrong. The evidence is overwhelming.

Surely no one will deny that misery, poverty and nakedness are breeders of sedition. Had it not been for the Navigation Acts there would not have been so many desperate persons in Virginia ready at any excuse to fly in the face of the Government. Bacon's men were just the type of miserably poor free-men that Berkeley several years before had feared would rebel. He himself, in his proclamation of Feb. 10, 1677, spoke of

them as "men of mean and desperate fortunes."<sup>27</sup> William Sherwood called the rebels rude and indigent persons, alluding to them as "tag, rag and bobtail."<sup>28</sup> Over and over again they are described as the multitude, the rabble, the skum.

Exception must be taken also to the statement that had there existed in Virginia any well-defined feeling of antagonism to the Navigation Acts it would have found expression in the county grievances. It should be remembered that these reports had been called for by the commissioners sent over by Charles II to investigate the troubles. The men who drew them up occupied the position of defeated rebels, and the grievances were primarily a list of excuses for their treason. They all stood trembling for their property, if they had any, and for their miserable lives. The memory of the fate of Drummond and Bland and Arnold and many others of their fellow rebels was fresh in their minds. It is not reasonable to suppose that they would tell the King that they had risen in arms against his authority in order to secure the overthrow of laws which his Majesty considered of such vital importance, laws which concerned intimately the royal revenue. Such a declaration would not have seconded successfully their plea for mercy. This is made amply clear by the reception accorded one of the few complaints which did actually touch the Navigation Acts. The commissioners report it to the King as "an extravagant request for liberty to transport their tobacco to any of his Majesty's plantations without paying the imposts, payable by act of Parliament, etc. This head is wholly mutinous—to desire a thing contrary to his Majesty's royal pleasure and benefit and also against an act of Parliament."<sup>29</sup>

Despite the obviously ruinous effects of the Navigation Acts upon Virginia, Mr. Beer makes the assertion that there was no very serious and general opposition to them in Virginia. "Apart from the criticisms of Bland and Berkeley," he says,

"there was virtually no complaint against the system of trade enjoined by the Navigation Acts. While the Barbados Assembly and that colony's governors were vociferous in their protests, the Virginia legislature remained strangely mute."<sup>80</sup>

This silence on the part of the Virginia Assembly can by no means be interpreted as an indication that the people of the colony felt the Navigation Acts to be equitable and not injurious to their interests. It meant only that no Assembly under Sir William Berkeley would dare protest against an act which had received the royal sanction. That would have seemed the veriest treason to the fiery old loyalist. And the Assembly was entirely under Sir William's control. The members of both Houses were his creatures and his henchmen. Over and over again it is testified that the Assembly did nothing more than register his will.<sup>81</sup> If then it did not protest, it was because Sir William did not wish it to protest.

But this does not prove that the planters were not angered and alarmed at the stringent acts. That they considered them baleful is amply proved by their continuous complaints of the economic ruin which had overtaken the colony. The method they chose of combatting the trade laws, a method apt to be far more effective than the angry protests of the Barbados Assembly, was to send the Governor to England to use his influence at Court to have the acts modified or repealed. And Berkeley did what he could. While in England he wrote a paper called *A Discourse and View of Virginia*, which he hoped would induce the Government to change its policy in regard to the colonies. "Wee cannot but resent," he said, "that 40,000 people should be impoverished to enrich little more than 40 merchants, who being the whole buyers of our tobacco, give us what they please for it. And after it is here sell as they please, and indeed have 40,000 servants in us at cheaper rates, than other men have slaves, for they find them

meat and drink and clothes. We furnish ourselves and their seamen with meat and drink, and all our sweat and labor as they order us, will hardly procure us coarse clothes to keep us from the extremities of heat and cold."<sup>32</sup> That Sir William was but the mouthpiece of the colony in this protest there can be no doubt.

But his pleadings were in vain. England would not change the laws which were the expression of her settled colonial policy. The planters must adjust themselves to changed conditions no matter how bitter was the experience. Sir William was told to go home to report to the Virginians that they need not kick against the pricks, but that England would be most pleased could they turn from the all-absorbing culture of tobacco to the production of the raw materials she so greatly desired. And Berkeley did return determined to exert every effort to lead the colonists into new prosperity by inducing them to devote a part of their energies to basic commodities. In fact he promised that in seven years he would flood the British market with new Virginia goods.<sup>33</sup>

Although he set to work with his accustomed vigor to make good this boast, he met with but scant success. Lack of efficient and skilled labor, high wages, and not very favorable natural conditions, made it impossible for him to compete with the long-established industries of Europe. After a few years all attempts to make silk and potash and naval stores were abandoned, and the planters continued to put their trust in tobacco.

That Berkeley was never persuaded that the Navigation Acts were just or beneficial is shown by his answer to the query of the Lords of Trade in 1671, when they asked him what impediments there were to the colony's trade. "Mighty and destructive," he replied, "by that severe act of Parliament which excludes us from having any commerce with any na-

tion in Europe but our own, so that we cannot add to our plantation any commodity that grows out of it . . . for it is not lawful for us to carry a pipe-staff or a bushel of corn to any place in Europe out of the King's dominions. If this were for his Majesty's service or the good of his subjects we should not repine, whatever our sufferings are for it. But on my soul it is the contrary of both."<sup>85</sup>

Nor is this the only direct testimony that the colonists were filled with bitterness against the Navigation Acts. In 1673, during the war with Holland, Sir John Knight declared that "the planters there do generally desire a trade with the Dutch and all other nations, and speak openly there that they are in the nature of slaves, so that the hearts of the greatest part of them are taken away from his Majesty and consequently his Majesty's best, greatest and richest plantation is in danger, with the planters' consent, to fall into the enemy's hands, if not timely prevented."<sup>86</sup> This is corroborated by the Council itself, in an official letter to the King. "For in this very conjuncture had the people had a distasteful Governor," they wrote, "they would have hazarded the loss of this Country, and the rather because they doe believe their Condicon would not be soe bad under the Dutch in Point of Traffique as it is under the Merchants who now use them hardly, even to extremity."<sup>87</sup>

It is evident, then, that throughout the entire reign of Charles II the unhappy effects of the trade restrictions made of Virginia, which formerly had been the land of opportunity for the poor man, a place of suffering, poverty and discontent. The indentured servant who came over after 1660 found conditions in the colony hardly more favorable for his advancement than in England. The price of tobacco was now so low that it was not possible for a man, by his unassisted efforts, to make a profit by its cultivation. If Thomas Ludewell is correct in estimating the return from the average crop at fifty

shillings, the lot of the poor man must have been hard indeed. Hungry he need not be, for food continued to be abundant and easy to obtain, but of all that the merchants gave him in return for his tobacco—clothing, farm implements, household furnishings—he had to content himself with the scantiest supply. And only too often his pressing needs brought him into hopeless debt. As for imitating his predecessors of the earlier period in saving money, purchasing land and servants and becoming a substantial citizen, the task was well nigh impossible of accomplishment.

It would be expected, then, that even the most exhaustive investigation could reveal but a few indentured servants, coming over after 1660, who succeeded in establishing themselves in the Virginia yeomanry. And such, indeed, is the case. Fortunately we have at hand for the period in question the means of determining this matter with an exactness impossible for the first half of the century. Nicholson's rent roll of 1704 supplies a complete list, with the exception of those in the Northern Neck, of every landowner in Virginia. At the same time we have in the Land Office at Richmond, the names of many thousands of persons listed as headrights, constituting almost all the immigrants who came in during the years from 1666 to the end of the century. Thus by comparing the two lists and trying to identify on the rent roll the names found in the patents, it is possible to fix the proportion of servants who won for themselves at this time places among the landowning class.

Selecting the year 1672 as typical of the Restoration period, we find that an examination of 672 of the names which are listed as headrights, eleven only can be identified with any degree of certainty upon the rent roll. Of 1116 names examined in the years from 1671 to 1674 inclusive, only 26 are positively those of persons listed as landowners in 1704. After making

due allowance for the fact that uncertainty exists in a number of other cases, and that some who prospered must have died in the intervening years, it is safe to say that not more than five or six per cent of the indentured servants of this period succeeded in establishing themselves as independent planters.

These conclusions are borne out by the slowness with which the population increased during the years following the passage of the Navigation Acts. In the Commonwealth period the colony had advanced by leaps and bounds, and the inhabitants, estimated at 15,000 in 1649,<sup>38</sup> were placed by Berkeley thirteen years later at 40,000.<sup>39</sup> Under the system which existed during these years, when the colonists enjoyed a comparatively free trade, the population had tripled. But after 1660, while the Virginia tobacco was dumped upon the restricted English market and prices fell lower and lower, no such rapid growth is noted. In 1671, nine years after his first estimate, Governor Berkeley still placed the population at 40,000.<sup>40</sup> And even if we accept the statement of the Virginia agents sent to England to secure a charter for the colony that in 1675 the number of inhabitants was 50,000, it is evident that some pernicious influence was at work to retard the development of England's most important American province.<sup>41</sup> A drop in the rate of increase from 200 per cent during the thirteen years prior to 1662, to 25 per cent in the thirteen years following, is a clear index to the startling change brought about in the colony by the British trade regulations.

These figures are the more significant in that there was no appreciable slackening of the stream of servants. It is probable that in the period from 1662 to 1675, which marked this estimated increase of 10,000 persons, fully 20,000 immigrants had come to the colony.<sup>42</sup> The patent rolls for 1674 alone give the names of 1931 headrights, and this year is by no means exceptional. No wonder Edward Randolph was sur-

prised at the smallness of the population and wrote to the Board of Trade that it should be investigated why Virginia had not grown more, "considering what vast numbers of servants and others had been transported thither."<sup>43</sup>

But Randolph failed to realize that it is not the volume of immigration but the number of people a country will support which in the end determines the size of the population. It was not enough to pour into the colony tens of thousands of poor settlers; opportunity had also to be afforded them for earning an adequate living. And this opportunity, because of the enforcement of the Navigation Acts and the consequent ruin of trade, they did not have in Virginia. Throughout the Restoration period not more than forty or fifty thousand people could exist upon the returns from the tobacco crop, and beyond that the population could hardly rise. If more poured in, they must of necessity live in misery and rags, or migrate to other colonies where more favorable conditions existed.

We are not at present concerned with what became of this surplus population, but only with the fact that the Navigation Acts brought to a dead halt the process of moulding freedmen and other poor settlers into a prosperous yeomanry. By the year 1660 this class seems to have reached its highest development, and had a rent roll of land owners been drawn up at that date it would doubtless have shown almost as many names as that of 1704. In fact it is fortunate that in the bitter years from 1660 to 1685 it did not succumb entirely. With the price of tobacco so low that no profit was to be derived from it, with his family in rags, the small planter might well have sold his land to his more wealthy neighbor and joined the newly freed servants in moving on to western Carolina or to the northern colonies.

In fact it is an indication of the solid character of the Vir-

ginia yeomanry that it survived to enter the Eighteenth century, that under Andros and Nicholson as well as under Sir William Berkeley it was the soundest element in the life of the colony. Had it not been for the crowning misfortune of the introduction of great swarms of negro slaves, sooner or later it would have come once more into its own, would have carved out for itself a new prosperity, would have filled Virginia from the Atlantic to the Alleghanies.

## CHAPTER VI

### THE YEOMAN IN VIRGINIA HISTORY

PERHAPS it would have been impossible for the Virginia yeoman to survive the dark days of the Restoration period had it not been for the fact that in the matter of his food supply he was independent of England and her vexatious trade restrictions. He might be in rags, but there was no reason why he should ever feel the pangs of hunger. Seldom in any climate, in any age has food existed in such extraordinary variety and in such lavish abundance.

Almost every planter, even the poorest, was possessed of cattle. The *Perfect Discription* states that in 1649 there were in the colony "of Kine, Oxen, Bulls, Calves, twenty thousand, large and good."<sup>1</sup> Fifteen years later the number had increased to 100,000.<sup>2</sup> Many a little farmer, too poor to afford the help of a servant or a slave, had cattle more than sufficient for his every need. John Splitimber, a planter of meagre means, died in 1677 owning eight cows and one bull.<sup>3</sup> John Gray, whose entire personal estate was valued only at 9,340 pounds of tobacco, possessed at his death six cows, six calves, two steers and one heifer.<sup>4</sup> The inventory of the goods of Richard Avery, another poor planter, shows three steers, one heifer, three small cattle and one calf.<sup>5</sup> The yeoman not only secured from these animals a goodly supply of beef, but milk in abundance from which he made butter and cheese. The steers he used as beasts of burden.

The meat which most frequently appeared upon the table of the poor man was that of swine. The planter marked his hogs and turned them loose in the woods to feed upon roots

and acorns. On the other hand, sheep did not multiply in the colony, for the woods were not suited for their maintenance, and those areas which had been cleared of trees could more profitably be utilized for agriculture than for pasture lands. Mutton was a rare delicacy even with the well-to-do.<sup>6</sup>

Poultry were exceedingly numerous. At the time of the Company it was stated that the planter who failed to breed one hundred a year was considered a poor manager. The *Perfect Description* says that the poultry—"Hens, Turkies, Ducks, Geece"—were without number.<sup>7</sup> Moreover, the wild fowls of the inland waterways were so numerous that even the least skilful of huntsmen could readily bring down enough for the needs of his family, and the mallard, the goose, the canvas-back appeared regularly in season upon every table.<sup>8</sup>

The planter always devoted a part of his land to the production of the grain which was needed for his personal requirements. "They yearly plow and sow many hundred acres of Wheat," it was said, "as good and faire as any in the world."<sup>9</sup> At the same time maize grew so readily and its cultivation proved so cheap, that cornbread formed a part of the diet not only of the planters themselves, but of their servants and slaves.

From his garden, an inevitable accompaniment of every plantation, the farmer secured a large variety of vegetables—potatoes, asparagus, carrots, turnips, onions, parsnips, besides such fruits as strawberries, gooseberries, raspberries; from his orchard he had apples, pears, quinces, apricots, peaches.<sup>10</sup> Honey was abundant, and there were few householders who did not have hives under the eaves of their outbuildings. One planter, a Mr. George Pelton, is said to have made a profit of £30 from his bees.<sup>11</sup> There were also many wild swarms in the woods, which yielded a delicious return to the colonial bee-hunters.<sup>12</sup>

It is easy to understand, then, why there were no complaints of hunger even in the days when poverty was almost universal. The Virginia yeoman spread always an abundant table. "He that is lazy and will not work," said the author of *New Albion*, "needs not fear starving, but may live as an Indian, sometimes Oysters, Cockles, Wilkes, Clams, Scollons two moneths together; sometimes wilde Pease and Vetches, and Long Oates, sometimes Tuckaho, Cuttenoman ground, Nuts, Marhonions, sometimes small nuts, Filbirds, Wallnuts, Pokeberries, ten sorts of Berries, Eggs of Foul, small Fish in Coves at low water will teach him to live idly." "It must needs follow then that diet cannot be scarce, since both rivers and woods afford it, and that such plenty of Cattle and Hogs are every where, which yield beef, veal, milk, butter, cheese and other made dishes, porke, bacon and pigs, and that as sweet and savoury meat as the world affords, these with the help of Orchards and Gardens, Oysters, Fish, Fowle and Venison, certainly cannot but be sufficient for a good diet and wholsom accommodation, considering how plentifully they are, and how easie with industry to be had."<sup>13</sup>

But the little planter, with the advent of the Navigation Acts, often suffered keenly from a lack of adequate clothing. Again and again the letters of the period state that the poor man was reduced to rags, that he could not protect his family from the winter's cold. There was some manufacture of cloth in the home, but the planter usually trusted to the foreign trader to bring him every article of clothing. He had neither the implements nor the skill to supply his own needs. During the Restoration period, and again at the time of the war of the Spanish Succession, when the price of tobacco fell so very low, many families succeeded in producing enough homespun to supply their most pressing needs.<sup>14</sup> But with the return of better conditions they laid aside the loom and the wheel, and resumed their purchase of English cloth.

In normal times the poor planter was comfortably clad. Edward Williams, in *Virginia Richly Valued*, advised every new immigrant to bring a monmouth cap, a waistcoat, a suit of canvas, with bands, shirts, stockings and shoes.<sup>15</sup> The author of *New Albion* thought that each adventurer should provide himself with canvas or linen clothes, with shoes and a hat.<sup>16</sup>

The houses of the small planters were small but comfortable. "Pleasant in their building," says John Hammond, "which although for most part they are but one story besides the loft, and built of wood, yet contrived so delightfully that your ordinary houses in England are not so handsome, for usually the rooms are large, daubed and whitelimed, glazed and flowered, and if not glazed windows, shutters which are made very pritty and convenient."<sup>17</sup> *The New Description of Virginia*, published in 1649, says: "They have Lime in abundance for their houses, store of bricks made, and House and Chimnies built of Brick, and some of Wood high and fair, covered with Shingell for Tyle."<sup>18</sup>

In the days of the Company most of the houses seem to have been made of logs, and Butler, in his *Virginia Unmasked*, declared that they were the "worst in the world," and that the most wretched cottages in England were superior to them.<sup>19</sup> But the period of which Butler wrote was exceptional, and before long the growing prosperity of the colony made possible a great improvement in the dwellings of the people. The rough log cabin gave way to the little framed cottage with chimneys at each end.

A residence erected in one of the parishes of the Eastern Shore in 1635 to serve as a parsonage may be accepted as typical of the better class of houses in Virginia at this time. It was made of wood, was forty feet wide, eighteen deep and had a chimney at each end. On either side was an additional

apartment, one used as a study, the other as a buttery.<sup>20</sup> For the poor man this was far too pretentious, and he had to content himself with a home perhaps thirty by twenty feet, containing at times two or three apartments, at times only one.

But such as it was it gave him ample protection against the heat of summer and the cold of winter. Fuel he never lacked. When the frosts of December and January came upon him, he had only to repair to the nearest forest, axe in hand, to supply himself with wood in abundance. In this way, not only would he keep a roaring blaze in his open fireplace, but would widen the space available for the next summer's tobacco crop.

The surroundings of the planter's residence were severely plain. In the yard, which usually was uninclosed, towered a cluster of trees, a survival of the primeval forest. Nearby was the garden, with its flowers and vegetables, the dove-cote, the barn, the hen house, perhaps a milk house or even a detached kitchen. In some cases wells were sunk, but the use of natural springs was more common.<sup>21</sup>

Of the plantation itself, only a fraction was under cultivation at one time. Tobacco was exceedingly exhausting to the soil, but the cheapness of land led the planters to neglect the most ordinary precautions to preserve its fertility. They sowed year after year upon the same spot, until the diminishing yield warned them of approaching sterility, and then would desert it to clear a new field. This system made it necessary for them to provide for the future by securing farms far larger in extent than was dictated by their immediate requirements. They had to look forward to the day when their land would become useless, and if they were provident, would purchase ten times more than they could cultivate at any one time. Thomas Whitlock, in his will dated 1659, says: "I give to my son Thomas Whitlock the land I live on, 600 acres, when he is of the age 21, and during his minority to my wife. The

land not to be further made use of or by planting or seating than the first deep branch that is commonly rid over, that my son may have some fresh land when he attains to age."<sup>22</sup>

One may gain an idea of the condition of the very poorest class of freemen by an examination of the inventory of the estate of Walter Dorch, drawn up in 1684. This man possessed two pairs of woollen cards, and one spinning wheel, valued at 100 pounds of tobacco, one chest at eighty pounds, four old trays at twenty pounds, two runletts at forty pounds, one pail and one skillet at sixty pounds, one bowl at two pounds, one feather bed, two pillows and three old blankets at 120 pounds of tobacco, three glass bottles at twenty pounds, one couch frame at forty pounds, one pair of pot-hooks at forty, 800 tenpenny nails at forty-five, and one old table and one sifter at twenty pounds. In all the estate was valued at 587 pounds of tobacco.<sup>23</sup>

John Gray, who died in 1685, left personal property worth 9,340 pounds of tobacco, consisting in part of six cows and six calves, four yearlings, two steers, one heifer, one barrel of corn, one bull, ten hogs and one horse. He had no servants and no slaves.<sup>24</sup> In better circumstances was Richard Avery, who seems to have been a tanner by profession. The inventory of his estate, recorded in 1686, includes one horse with bridle and saddle, a cart and a yoke of steers, eight head of cattle, 25 hogs, 118 hides, various kinds of tools, lumber to the value of 400 pounds of tobacco, four pieces of earthenware, four beds with mattresses and covers, poultry to the value of 180 pounds of tobacco, some wheat in the ground and a batch of wearing linen. The entire personal estate was valued at 14,050 pounds of tobacco. It included no servants or slaves.<sup>25</sup>

John Splitimber, who is entered as a headright to Thomas Harwood in 1635, is typical of the planter who rose from small beginnings to a state of comparative prosperity. This man, at

his death in 1677, possessed eight cows, one bull, four yearlings, four mares, 35 hogs, two horses, two bolsters, a pillow, two blankets, a mattress, two bedsteads, two guns, fifty-six pounds of pewter, two rugs, a table, three chests, one old couch, two iron pots, two kettles, two stilyards, shovel and tongs, two smothering irons, two axes, a few carpenter's tools, a saddle and bridle, four casks, clothing to the value of 1,100 pounds of tobacco, a frying pan, a butter pat, a jar, a looking glass, two milk pans, one table cloth, nine spoons, a churn, a bible. The appraisers placed the total value at 18,277 pounds of tobacco.<sup>26</sup> The inventory records no servants or slaves, but it is probable that Splitimber at times made use of indentured labor, as in November 1648 and again in 1652, we find him taking up land due for the transportation of certain persons to the colony.<sup>27</sup>

Of similar estate was Christopher Pearson, of York county. His personal property included bedding valued at £7, linen at 18 shillings, pewter at £1.18.0, brass at six shillings, wooden ware at £4.13.6 comprising three chairs and one table, a couch, four old chests, a cask, two ten gallon rundletts, a cheese press, a box of drawers, an old table, three pails, a spinning wheel with cards, two sifting trays, a corn barrel, three bedsteads, four sives, a funnel; iron ware valued at £2.12.0, including three pots, two pot-rocks, a pestal, a frying pan, a looking glass; three cows appraised at £6.5.0, a yearling at ten shillings, a colt at two pounds sterling. The entire estate was valued at £25.19.6.<sup>28</sup>

It must not be imagined, however, that Virginia, even in the early years of its settlement, contained no men of wealth or rank. Industry and intelligence bore their inevitable fruit in the little colony, with the result that here and there certain planters acquired an enviable pre-eminence among their fellows. *The New Description* mentions several such cases.

Captain Matthews "hath a fine house," it says, "and all things answerable to it; he sowses yearly store of Hempe and Flax, and causes it to be spun; he keeps Weavers, and hath a Tan-house, causes Leather to be dressed, hath eight Shoemakers employed in their trade, hath forty Negro servants, brings them up to Trades in his house. He yeerly sowes abundance of Wheat, Barley, &c. The Wheat he selleth at four shillings the bushell; kills store of Beeves, and sells them to victuall the Ships when they come thither: hath abundance of Kine, a brave Dairy, Swine great store, and Poltery; he married a Daughter of Sir Thomas Hinton, and in a word, keeps a good house, lives bravely, and a true lover of Virginia; he is worthy of much honor."<sup>29</sup>

This description is interesting because it shows not only the extent of the holdings of certain planters at this early date, but that their prosperity had the same foundation as that of the more numerous class of wealthy men of the Eighteenth century. In both cases slavery and plantation manufacture would seem to have been the open sesame to success. It is notable that of the very limited number of men in Virginia prior to 1700 who stand out above their fellows in the readiness with which they acquired property, almost all gathered around them a goodly number of negroes.

Among the prominent planters of the first half of the Seventeenth century was George Menefie, famous for his orchard which abounded in apple, pear and cherry trees, and for his garden which yielded all kinds of fruits, vegetables, and flowers; Richard Bennett, a man of large property who had in one year "out of his Orchard as many Apples as he made 20 Butts of Excellent Cider"; Richard Kinsman, who for three or four years in succession secured "forty or fifty Butts of Perry made out of his Orchard, pure and good."<sup>30</sup>

In the second half of the century the class of the well-to-do,

although somewhat more numerous, was still restricted to a small group of prominent families, many of them connected by marriage. Among the best known men are Nathaniel Bacon, Sr., Thomas Ballard, Robert Beverely, Giles Brent, Joseph Bridger, William Byrd I, John Carter, John Custis I, Dudley Digges, William Fitzhugh, Lewis Burwell, Philip Ludwell I, William Moseley, Daniel Parke, Ralph Wormeley, Benjamin Harrison, Edward Hill, Edmund Jennings and Matthew Page. But so few were their numbers that the Governors more than once complained that they could not find men for the Council of State qualified for that post by their wealth and influence.

The depository of power for the Virginia yeomanry was the House of Burgesses. This important body was elected by the votes of the freeholders, and faithfully represented their interests. Here they would bring their grievances, here express their wishes, here defend themselves against injustice, here demand the enactment of legislation favorable to their class. The hope of the people lay always in the Burgesses, Bacon the rebel tells us, "as their Trusts, and Sanctuary to fly to."<sup>81</sup> And though the commons usually elected to this body the leading men of each county, men of education and wealth if such were to be found, they held them to a strict accountability for their every action.<sup>82</sup> Many of the best known members of the Council of State served their apprenticeship in the Burgesses. But whatever the social status of the Burgess, he felt always that he was the representative of the poor planter, the defender of his interests, and seldom indeed did he betray his trust.<sup>83</sup> This no doubt was with him in part a matter of honor, but it also was the result of a consciousness that unless he obeyed the behests of his constituency he would be defeated if he came up for re-election.

The House of Burgesses, even in the days when the colony

was but an infant settlement stretching along the banks of the James, did not hesitate to oppose the wishes of the King himself. In 1627 Charles I sent instructions for an election of Burgesses that he might gain the assent of the planters through their representatives to an offer which he made to buy their tobacco.<sup>34</sup> Although the Assembly must have realized that its very existence might depend upon its compliance with the King's wishes, it refused to accept his proposal.<sup>35</sup> In 1634 Charles again made an offer for the tobacco, but again he encountered stubborn opposition. The Secretary of the colony forwarded a report in which he frankly told the British Government that in his opinion the matter would never go through if it depended upon the yielding of the Assembly.<sup>36</sup>

In 1635 the people again showed their independent spirit by ejecting Sir John Harvey from the Government and sending him back to England. It is true that the Council members took the lead in this bold step, but they would hardly have gone to such lengths had they not been supported by the mass of small planters.<sup>37</sup> In fact, one of the chief grievances against the Governor was his refusal to send to the King a petition of the Burgesses, which he considered offensive because they had made it "a popular business, by subscribing a multitude of hands thereto." And some days before the actual expulsion Dr. John Pott, Harvey's chief enemy, was going from plantation to plantation, inciting the people to resistance and securing their signatures to a paper demanding a redress of grievances.<sup>38</sup>

The attitude of the small planters during the English civil war and Commonwealth period is equally instructive. Certain writers have maintained that the people of Virginia were a unit for the King, that upon the execution of Charles I his son was proclaimed with the unanimous consent of the planters, that the colony became a refuge for English cavaliers,

that it surrendered to Parliament only when conquered by an armed expedition and that it restored Charles II as King of Virginia even before he had regained his power in England.

All of this is either misleading or entirely false. It is true that the Assembly proclaimed Charles II King in 1649 and passed laws making it high treason for any person to uphold the legality of the dethronement and execution of his father.<sup>39</sup> But this was largely the work of Sir William Berkeley and the small group of well-to-do men who were dependent upon him for their welfare. The very fact that it was felt necessary to threaten with dire punishment all who spread abroad reports "tending to a change of government," shows that there existed a fear that such a change might be effected.<sup>40</sup> How many of the small planters were at heart friendly to Parliament it is impossible to say, but the number was large enough to cause Sir William Berkeley such serious misgivings as to his own personal safety that he obtained from the Assembly a guard of ten men to protect him from assassination.<sup>41</sup>

Nor can it be said that Virginia was forced into an unwilling submission to Parliament. It is true that an expedition was sent to conquer the colony, which entered the capes, sailed up to the forts at Jamestown and there received the formal surrender of the colony.<sup>42</sup> But this surrender was forced upon the Governor as much by the wishes of the people as by the guns of the British fleet. In fact, the expedition had been sent at the request of certain representatives of the Parliamentary faction in Virginia, who made it clear to the Commonwealth leaders that the colony was by no means unanimous for the King, and that it was held to its allegiance only by the authority and firm will of the Governor.<sup>43</sup> That the British Council of State expected to receive active assistance from their friends in Virginia is evident, for they gave directions for raising troops there and for appointing officers.<sup>44</sup> And

there can be no doubt that the imposing military force which had been gathered to defend Jamestown was not called into action chiefly because Berkeley became convinced that it could not be relied upon to fight against the Commonwealth soldiers.

The new regime which was introduced with the articles of surrender made of Virginia virtually a little republic. In England the long cherished hope of the patriots for self-government was disappointed by the usurpation of Oliver Cromwell. But the commons of Virginia reaped the reward which was denied their brothers of the old country. For a period of eight years all power resided in the House of Burgesses. This body, so truly representative of the small planter class, elected the Governor and specified his duties. If his administration proved unsatisfactory they could remove him from office. The Burgesses also chose the members of the Council. Even the appointing of officials was largely theirs, although this function they usually felt it wise to delegate to the Governor.<sup>45</sup> In fact, Virginia was governed during this period, the happiest and most prosperous of its early history, by the small proprietor class which constituted the bulk of the population.

Nor is it true that the people voluntarily surrendered this power by acknowledging the authority of Charles II before the actual restoration in England. After the death of Cromwell, when the affairs of the mother country were in chaos and no man knew which faction would secure possession of the government, the Virginia Assembly asked Sir William Berkeley to act again as their chief executive. But it was specifically stipulated that he was to hold his authority, not from Charles, but from themselves alone.<sup>46</sup> In this step the people were doubtless actuated by an apprehension that the monarchy might be restored, in which case it would be much to their advantage to have as the chief executive of the colony the former royal Governor; but they expressly

stated that they held themselves in readiness to acknowledge the authority of any Government, whatever it might be, which succeeded in establishing itself in England. So far was Sir William from considering himself a royal Governor, that when the King actually regained his throne, he wrote with no little apprehension, begging forgiveness for having accepted a commission from any other source than himself.<sup>47</sup>

It was the small farmer class which suffered most from the despotic methods of Berkeley during the Restoration period—the corrupting of the House of Burgesses, the heavy taxes, the usurpation of power in local government, the distribution of lucrative offices—and it was this class which rose in insurrection in 1676. It is notable that in the course of Bacon's Rebellion the great mass of the people turned against the Governor, either approving passively of his expulsion, or actually aiding his enemies. When Sir William appealed for volunteers in Gloucester county while Bacon was upon the Pamunkey expedition, he could hardly muster a man.<sup>48</sup> And the forces which eventually he gathered around him seem to have included only a handful of leading citizens, such men as Philip Ludwell, Nathaniel Bacon, Sr., Giles Brent and Robert Beverley, together with a mass of indentured servants and others who had been forced into service. It is this which explains the apparent cowardice of the loyal forces, who almost invariably took to their heels at the first approach of the rebels, for men will not risk their lives for a cause in which their hearts are not enlisted.

And though the small farmers lost their desperate fight, though their leaders died upon the scaffold, though the oppressive Navigation Acts remained in force, though taxes were heavier than ever, though the governors continued to encroach upon their liberties, they were by no means crushed and they continued in their legislative halls the conflict that

had gone against them upon the field of battle. But the political struggle too was severe. It was in the decade from 1678 to 1688 that the Stuart monarchs made their second attempt to crush Anglo-Saxon liberty, an attempt fully as dangerous for the colonies as for England. The dissolving of the three Whig Parliaments, and the acceptance of a pension from Louis XIV were followed not only by the execution of liberal leaders and the withdrawal of town charters in the mother country, but by a deliberate attempt to suppress popular government in America. It was not a mere coincidence that the attack upon the Massachusetts charter, the misrule of Nicholson in New York, the oppressions of the proprietor in Maryland and the tyranny of Culpeper and Effingham in Virginia occurred simultaneously. They were all part and parcel of the policy of Charles II and James II.

These attempts met with failure in Virginia because of the stubborn resistance they encountered from the small farmer class and their representatives in the House of Burgesses. The annulling of statutes by proclamation they denounced as illegal; they protested bitterly against the appointment of their clerk by the Governor; they fought long to retain their ancient judicial privileges; they defeated all attempts of the King and his representatives in Virginia to deprive them of the right to initiate legislation and to control taxation. And with the Glorious Revolution of 1688-89, which put an end forever to Stuart aggressions, they could feel that their efforts alone had preserved liberty in Virginia, that they might now look forward to long years of happiness and prosperity. The Virginia yeoman reckoned not with slavery, however, and slavery was to prove, in part at least, his undoing.

## *CHAPTER VII*

### WORLD TRADE

IN 1682 the depression which for nearly a quarter of a century had gripped the tobacco trade, somewhat abruptly came to an end. "Our only commodity, tobacco, having the last winter a pretty quick market, hath encouraged ye planters," wrote Secretary Spencer to the Board of Trade in May, 1683.<sup>1</sup> Apparently the tide had turned. From this time until the beginning of the War of the Spanish Succession more than two decades later we hear little complaint from Virginia, while there are excellent reasons to suppose that the colony was experiencing a period of growth and prosperity.

In truth the tobacco trade, upon which the planters staked their all, now expanded with startling rapidity, and each year the merchants were forced to add more bottoms to the fleet which sailed for England from the Chesapeake. During the early years of the Restoration period tobacco exports from Virginia and Maryland had made but little advance. In 1663 they amounted to 7,367,140 pounds, six years later they were 9,026,046 pounds.<sup>2</sup> In 1698, however, the output of Virginia and Maryland was estimated by the merchant John Linton to be from 70,000 to 80,000 hogsheads.<sup>4</sup> Since the hogshead usually contained from 500 to 600 pounds, these figures mean that the planters were then raising from 35,000,000 to 48,000,-000 pounds of tobacco. And this conclusion is supported by the fact that the crop of 1699 is valued at £198,115. which at a penny a pound would indicate about 47,000,000 pounds.<sup>5</sup> In fact, the production of tobacco in the ten years from 1689

to 1699 seems to have tripled, in the years from 1669 to 1699 to have quadrupled. In 1669 the planters considered themselves fortunate if their industry yielded them a return of £30,000; at the end of the century they could count with a fair degree of certainty upon six times that amount.

For Virginia this startling development was all-important. During the darkest days of the Restoration period her share of the total returns from the tobacco crop could hardly have exceeded £10,000; in 1699 it was estimated at £100,000. Even if we accept the conservative statement that the average number of hogsheads exported from Virginia in the last decade of the century varied from 35,000 to 40,000,<sup>6</sup> the planters still would have received £75,000 or £80,000. From dire poverty and distress the colony, almost in the twinkling of an eye, found itself in comparative ease and plenty.

Nor is the reason difficult to discover. It had never been the intention of the British Government to destroy the foreign trade of the colonies, the Navigation Acts having been designed only to force that trade through English channels. The planters were still at liberty to send their tobacco where they would, provided it went by way of England and paid the duty of a half penny a pound. That these restrictions so nearly put an end to shipments to the continent of Europe was an unfortunate consequence which to some extent had been foreseen, but which for the time being it was impossible to avoid.

It was undoubtedly the hope of the Government that the foreign market would eventually be regained and that the colonial tobacco would flow from the colonies into England and from England to all the countries of Europe. Prior to 1660 Holland had been the distributing centre for the tobacco of Virginia and Maryland; now England insisted upon taking this rôle upon herself. But the authorities at London were hardly less concerned than the planters themselves at the

difficulties encountered in effecting this change and the unfortunate glut in the home markets which followed.

None the less they persisted in the policy they had adopted, even clinging stubbornly to the half penny a pound re-export duty, and trusting that in time they could succeed in conquering for their tobacco the lost continental markets. In this they were bitterly opposed by the Dutch with whom it became necessary to fight two wars within the short space of seven years. Yet steadily, although at first slowly, they made headway. In 1681 the commissioners of the customs refused the request for a cessation of tobacco planting in the colonies, on the ground that to lessen the crop would but stimulate production in foreign countries and so restrict the sale abroad of the Virginia and Maryland leaf.<sup>7</sup> This argument has been denounced by some as both specious and selfish, yet it was fully justified by the situation then existing. After all, the only hope for the planters lay in conquering the European market and the way to do this was to flood England with tobacco until it overflowed all artificial barriers and poured across the Channel. And eventually this is just what happened. Since tobacco was piling up uselessly in the warehouses and much of it could not be disposed of at any price, it was inevitable that it should be dumped upon the other nations of Europe. There is in this development a close parallel with the commercial policy of Germany in the years prior to the world war, when no effort was spared to produce a margin of all kinds of wares over the home needs, which was to be exported at excessively low prices. This margin was a weapon of conquest, a means of ousting the merchants of other nations from this market or that. And when once this conquest had been effected, the price could be raised again in order to assure a profit to the German manufacturers.

It is improbable that the English economists of the Seventeenth century, like those of modern Germany, had foreseen exactly what would happen, but the results were none the less similar. When once the English leaf had secured a strong hold upon the Baltic and upon France and Spain, it was a matter of the greatest difficulty to oust it, especially as the ever increasing influx of slaves made it possible for the planters to meet the lower prices of foreign competitors and still clear a profit. Thus it was that during the years from 1680 to 1708 the Chesapeake tobacco succeeded in surmounting all the difficulties placed in its way by the Navigation Acts, the necessity of the double voyage, the re-export duty of a half penny a pound, and so gradually flooded the continental market.

It is unfortunate that figures for re-exported tobacco during the earlier years of the Restoration period are lacking. In 1688, however, it is stated that the duty of a half penny a pound was yielding the Crown an annual revenue of £15,000, which would indicate that about 7,200,000 pounds were leaving for foreign ports.<sup>8</sup> Ten years later, if we may believe the testimony of John Linton, exports of tobacco totalled 50,000 or 60,000 hogsheads, or from 25,000,000 to 30,000,000 pounds. Not more than a fourth of the colonial leaf, he tells us, was consumed in England itself.<sup>9</sup> Once more Virginia and Maryland were producing tobacco for all Europe, once more they enjoyed a world market.

This trade was extended from one end of the continent to the other. Vessels laden with American tobacco found their way not only to the ports of France and Holland and Spain, but even to the distant cities of Sweden and Russia.<sup>10</sup> The Baltic trade alone amounted to from 5,000 to 10,000 hogsheads, and added from £10,000 to £24,000 to the income of the planters. The chief Russian port of entry was Narva,

which took annually some 500 hogsheads, but large quantities were shipped also to Riga and Raval.<sup>11</sup> The northern nations bought the cheaper varieties, for no tobacco could be too strong for the hardy men of Sweden and Russia.

The trade was of great importance to England, as the leaf, after it had gone through the process of manufacture, sold for about six pence a pound, yielding to the nation in all from £60,000 to £130,000.<sup>12</sup> As the English were still largely dependent upon the Baltic for potash and ship stores, this constituted a most welcome addition to the balance of trade. To the colonies also it was vital, carrying off a large part of the annual crop, and so tending to sustain prices.

France, too, proved a good customer for English tobacco, and in the years prior to the War of the Spanish Succession took annually from 8,000 to 10,000 hogsheads, or from 4,000,-000 to 6,000,000 pounds.<sup>13</sup> Micajah Perry reported to the Lords of Trade that from 6,000 to 10,000 hogsheads went to France from London alone, while a very considerable amount was sent also from other ports.<sup>14</sup>

Far more surprising is the fact that even Spain consumed millions of pounds of English leaf. With her own colonies producing the best tobacco in the world and in the face of its practical exclusion from the English market, it is strange that the Government at Madrid should have permitted this commerce to continue. The obvious course for the Spaniards under the economic theories of the day would have been to exclude English tobacco, both in order to protect their own planters and to retaliate for the restrictions upon their product. Yet it is estimated that from 6,000 to 10,000 hogsheads entered Spain each year.<sup>15</sup> A pamphlet published in 1708 entitled *The Present State of Tobacco Plantations in America* stated that before the outbreak of the war then raging, France and Spain together had taken annually about 20,000 hogsheads.<sup>16</sup>

The Dutch, too, despite their bitter rivalry with the British, found it impossible to do without Virginia tobacco. Purchasing the finest bright Orinoco, they mixed it with leaf of their own growth in the proportion of one to four, and sold it to other European nations. In this way they sought to retain their position as a distributing center for the trade and to give employment to hundreds of poor workers. In all the Dutch seem to have purchased from England about 5,000 hogsheads a year.<sup>17</sup>

The enhanced importance of the tobacco trade is reflected in a steady increase of British exports to Virginia and Maryland. The planters, now that they found it possible to market their leaf, laid out the proceeds in the manufactured products of England. At the end of the Seventeenth century the two colonies were importing goods to the value of £200,000 annually. In 1698, which was an exceptionally good year, their purchases were no less than £310,133.<sup>18</sup>

In short the tobacco colonies had at last found their proper place in the British colonial system. Both they and the mother country, after long years of experimentation, years of misfortune and recrimination, had reached a common ground upon which to stand. Although Maryland and Virginia still fell short of the ideal set for the British colonies, although they failed to furnish the raw stuffs so urgently needed by the home industries, at least they yielded a product which added materially to shipping, weighed heavily in the balance of trade and brought a welcome revenue to the royal Exchequer.

The Crown reaped a rich return from tobacco, a return which grew not only with the expansion of the trade, but by the imposition from time to time of heavier duties. In the period from 1660 to 1685, when the tariff remained at

two pence a pound, the yield must have varied from £75,000 to £100,000. If we assume that the average consumption in England was 9,000,000 pounds and the average exports 3,000,000 the total revenue would have been £81,250. In 1685, however, an additional duty of three pence a pound was placed upon tobacco upon its arrival in England, all of which was refunded when the product was re-exported. In 1688, when the tobacco consumed in England was 8,328,800 pounds, the old and new duties, amounting in all to five pence, must have yielded £173,515. When to this is added £15,000 from the half penny a pound on the 7,200,000 pounds of leaf sent abroad, the total reaches £188,515.

In 1698 still another penny a pound was added to the tax, making a grand total of six pence on colonial tobacco disposed of in England. This new duty, together with the rapid increase in the foreign trade, enriched the Exchequer by another £100,000. In 1699, if we assume that 12,000,000 pounds were consumed in England, the return would have been £300,000; while half a penny a pound on 36,000,000 pounds of re-exported leaf, would have brought the total to £375,000. That this figure was approximately correct we have evidence in the statement of the author of *The Present State of the Tobacco Plantations*, written in 1705, that the revenue yielded by the tobacco of Virginia and Maryland amounted annually to £400,000.<sup>19</sup> This sum constituted a very appreciable proportion of the royal income, so appreciable in fact as to make the tobacco trade a matter of vital importance in the eyes of the King's ministers. They were charged at all times to avoid any contingency which might lessen the imports and reduce the customs.

The increase in the tobacco trade stimulated industry, not only by increasing exports to Virginia and Maryland, but also

by creating a new English industry. For most of the tobacco, before it was sent abroad, was subjected to a process of manufacture, by which the leaf was cut and rolled and otherwise prepared for the consumer. This industry gave employment to hundreds of poor persons in England and required a considerable outlay of capital.<sup>20</sup>

To British navigation the trade was vital. Each year scores of merchantmen crossed to the Chesapeake and swarmed in every river and creek, delivering their English goods to the planters and taking in return the hogsheads of tobacco. In 1690 the tobacco fleet numbered about 100 ships, aggregating 13,715 tons; in 1706 it counted no less than 300 sails.<sup>21</sup> Nor must it be forgotten that re-exported tobacco also added many a goodly merchantman to the navy and gave employment to many a seaman. Altogether Virginia and Maryland constituted an invaluable asset, an asset which ranked in importance secondly only to the sugar plantations.

It would naturally be supposed that the fortunate turn of events which restored to the tobacco colonies their European market would have reacted favorably upon the small planters of Virginia, not only insuring plenty to those already established, but adding new recruits from the ranks of the indentured servants; that the process of making prosperous freemen from the poor immigrants who flocked to the colony, the process interrupted by the passage of the Navigation Acts, would have been resumed now that these laws no longer prevented the flow of tobacco into the continental countries.

Such was not the case, however. A comparison of the lists of immigrants with the rent roll of 1704 shows that but an insignificant proportion of the newcomers succeeded in establishing themselves as landowners. In four lists examined for the year 1689, comprising 332 names, but seven persons can

be positively identified upon the rent roll. In 1690, eight lists of 933 names, reveal but twenty-eight persons who were landowners in 1704. Of 274 immigrants listed in 1691, six only appear on the Roll. In 1695, seven lists comprising 711 names, show but ten who possessed farms nine years later. Of 74 headrights appearing in 1696, but two are listed on the roll; of 119 in 1697 only nine; of 169 in 1698 one only; of 454 in 1699, only seven; of 223 in 1700 but six.<sup>22</sup> All in all not more than five per cent. of the newcomers during this period prospered and became independent planters. Apparently, then, the restored prosperity of the colony was not shared by the poorer classes, the increased market for tobacco did not better materially the chances of the incoming flood of indentured servants.

The explanation of this state of affairs is found in the fact that tobacco, despite its widened market, experienced no very pronounced rise in price. The average return to the planters during the good years seems to have been one penny a pound.<sup>23</sup> This, it is true, constituted an advance over the worst days of the Restoration period, but it was far from approaching the prices of the Civil war and Commonwealth periods. For the poor freedman, it was not sufficient to provide for his support and at the same time make it possible to accumulate a working capital. He could not, as he had done a half century earlier, lay aside enough to purchase a farm, stock it with cattle, hogs and poultry, perhaps even secure a servant or two. Now, although no longer reduced to misery and rags as in the years from 1660 to 1682, he could consider himself fortunate if his labor sufficed to provide wholesome food and warm clothing. How, it may be asked, could Virginia and Maryland produce the vast crops now required by the foreign trade, if the price was still so low? Prior to and just after Bacon's Rebellion the planters repeatedly asserted that their labors only served

to bring them into debt, that to produce an extensive crop was the surest way for one to ruin himself. Why was it that twenty years later, although prices were still far below the old level, they could flood the markets of the world?

The answer can be summed up in one word—slavery. The first cargo of negroes arrived in the colony in 1619 upon a Dutch privateer. Presumably they were landed at Jamestown, and sold there to the planters.<sup>24</sup> The vessel which won fame for itself by this ill-starred action, was sailing under letters of marque from the Prince of Orange and had been scouring the seas in search of Spanish prizes. Although the Dutch master could have had no information that slaves were wanted in the colony, he seems to have taken it for granted that he would not be forbidden to dispose of his human freight.

The introduction of this handful of negroes—there were but twenty in all—was not the real beginning of the slave system in the colonies. For many years the institution which was to play so sinister a part in American history did not flourish, and the slaves grew in numbers but slowly. In the Muster Roll of Settlers in Virginia, taken in 1624, there were listed only 22 negroes.<sup>25</sup> Sixteen years later the black population probably did not exceed 150.<sup>26</sup> In 1649, when Virginia was growing rapidly and the whites numbered 15,000, there were but 300 negroes in the colony.<sup>27</sup> A sporadic importation of slaves continued during the Commonwealth period, but still the number was insignificant, still the bulk of the labor in the tobacco fields was done by indentured servants and poor free-holders.

In 1670 Governor Berkeley reported to the Board of Trade that out of a total population of 40,000, but five per cent were slaves.<sup>28</sup> Eleven years later the number of blacks was estimated at 3,000.<sup>29</sup> In 1635 twenty-six negroes were brought in, the largest purchaser being Charles Harmer.<sup>30</sup> In 1636

the importations were but seven, in 1637 they were 28, in 1638 thirty, in 1639 forty-six, in 1642 seven only, in 1643 eighteen, in 1649 seventeen.<sup>31</sup> But with the passage of the years somewhat larger cargoes began to arrive. In 1662 Richard Lee claimed among his headrights no less than 80 negroes, in 1665 the Scarboroughs imported thirty-nine. In 1670, however, Berkeley declared that "not above two or three ships of Negroes" had arrived in the province in the previous seven years.<sup>32</sup>

It is evident, then, that during the larger part of the Seventeenth century slavery played but an unimportant rôle in the economic and social life of the colony. The planters were exceedingly anxious to make use of slave labor, which they considered the foundation of the prosperity of their rivals of the Spanish tobacco colonies, but slave labor was most difficult to obtain. The trade had for many years been chiefly in the hands of the Dutch, and these enterprising navigators sold most of their negroes to the Spanish plantations. Ever since the days of Henry VIII the English had made efforts to secure a share of this profitable traffic, but with very meagre success.<sup>33</sup>

The Dutch had established trading stations along the African coast, guarded by forts and war vessels. Any attempts of outsiders to intrude upon the commerce was regarded by them as an act of open aggression to be resisted by force of arms. To enter the trade with any hope of success it became necessary for the English to organize a company rich enough to furnish armed protection to their merchantmen. But no such organization could be established during the Civil War and Commonwealth periods, and it was not until 1660 that the African Company, under the leadership of the Duke of York entered the field.<sup>34</sup>

This was but the beginning of the struggle, however. The Dutch resisted strenuously, stirring up the native chieftains

against the English, seizing their vessels and breaking up their stations. Not until two wars had been fought was England able to wring from the stubborn Netherlanders an acknowledgment of her right to a share in the trade. Even then the Virginians were not adequately supplied, for the sugar islands were clamoring for slaves, and as they occupied so important a place in the colonial system they were the first to be served. Throughout the last quarter of the Seventeenth century negroes in fairly large numbers began to arrive in the Chesapeake, but it was only in the years from 1700 to 1720 that they actually accomplished the overthrow of the old system of labor and laid the foundations of a new social structure. Throughout the Seventeenth century the economic system of the tobacco colonies depended upon the labor of the poor white man, whether free or under terms of indenture; in the Eighteenth century it rested chiefly upon the black shoulders of the African slave.

There could be no manner of doubt as to the desirability of the slaves from an economic standpoint, apparently the only standpoint that received serious consideration. The indentured servant could be held usually for but a few years. Hardly had he reached his greatest usefulness for his master than he demanded his freedom. Thus for the man of large means to keep his fields always in cultivation it was necessary constantly to renew his supply of laborers. If he required twenty hands, he must import each year some five or six servants, or run the risk of finding himself running behind. But the slave served for life. The planter who had purchased a full supply of negroes could feel that his labor problems were settled once and for all. Not only could he hold the slaves themselves for life, but their children also became his property and took their places in the tobacco fields as soon as they approached maturity.

Thus in the end the slave was far cheaper. The price of a servant depended largely upon the cost of his passage across the ocean. We find that William Matthews, having three years and nine months to serve, was rated in the inventory of his master, John Thomas, at £12.<sup>35</sup> A servant of Robert Leightenhouse, having two years to serve, was put at £9,<sup>36</sup> while on the other hand we find another listed in the estate of Colonel Francis Epes, also having two years to serve, at only £5.<sup>37</sup> A white lad under indenture for seven years to Mr. Ralph Graves was valued at £10.<sup>38</sup> On the whole it would seem that the price of a sturdy man servant varied from £2 to £4 for each year of his service. On the other hand a vigorous slave could be had at from £18 to £30. Assuming that he gave his master twenty-five years of service, the cost for each year would be but one pound sterling. There could be no doubt, then, that in the mere matter of cost he was much cheaper than the indentured white man.

It is true that the negro was none too efficient as a laborer. Born in savagery, unacquainted with the English tongue, knowing little of agriculture, it was a matter of some difficulty for him to accustom himself to his task in the tobacco fields. Yet when his lesson had been learned, when a few years of experience had taught him what his master expected him to do, the slave showed himself quite adequate to the requirements of the one staple crop. The culture of tobacco is not essentially difficult, especially when pursued in the unscientific manner of the colonial period. It required many, but not skilled hands. The slave, untutored and unintelligent, proved inadequate to the industrial needs of the northern colonies. The niceties of shipbuilding were beyond his capacities, he was not needed as a fisherman, he was not a good sailor, he was useless in the system of intensive agriculture in vogue

north of Maryland. But in the tobacco field he would do. He could not at first tend so many plants as his white rival, he could not produce tobacco of such fine quality, but what he lacked in efficiency he more than made up for in cheapness.

The African seems to have withstood remarkably well the diseases indigenous to eastern Virginia. There are occasional reports of epidemics among the slaves, but usually they were fairly immune both to malaria and dysentery. A census taken in 1714, when there were perhaps 15,000 negroes in the colony, records burials for sixty-two slaves only.<sup>39</sup> The births of slaves for the same year totalled 253.<sup>40</sup> These figures indicate not only the excellent physical condition in which these black workers were kept by their masters, but the rapidity with which they were multiplying. The low death rate is in part explained by the fact that only strong men and women were transported to the colonies, but it is none the less clearly indicative of the ease with which the African accustomed himself to the climate of tidewater Virginia.

As a rule the negro was more docile than the white servant, especially if the latter happened to be from the ruder elements of English society. He was not so apt to resist his master or to run away to the mountains. Yet plots among the blacks were not unknown. In 1710 a conspiracy was discovered among the slaves of Surry and James City counties which was to have been put into execution on Easter day. The negroes planned to rise simultaneously, destroy any who stood in their way, and make good their escape out of the colony. Among the chief conspirators were Jamy, belonging to Mr. John Broadnax, Mr. Samuel Thompson's Peter, Tom and Cato of Mr. William Edwards, Great Jack and Little Jack of Mr. John Edwards, and Will belonging to Mr. Henry Hart. "Two or three of these were tried this general court," wrote Colonel Jennings, "found guilty and will be executed. And I hope

their fate will strike such a terror in the other Negroes as will keep them from forming such designs for the future."<sup>41</sup> The lesson did not prove lasting, however, for in 1730 a number of slaves from Norfolk and Princess Anne counties assembled while the whites were at church, and chose officers to command them in a bold stroke for freedom. As in the previous attempt they were discovered, many arrested and several of the ringleaders executed.<sup>42</sup>

Neither the merchants nor the planters seem to have been conscious of any wrong in the seizure and sale of negroes. They regarded the native Africans as hardly human, mere savages that were no more deserving of consideration than oxen or horses. And as it was right and proper to hitch the ox or the horse to the plow, so it was equally legitimate to put the negro to work in the fields of sugar cane or tobacco. Whatever hardships he had to endure upon the voyage to America or by reason of his enforced labor, they considered amply compensated by his conversion to Christianity.

It is true that the colony of Virginia early in the Eighteenth century imposed a heavy duty upon the importation of slaves, but it did so neither from any consciousness of wrong in slavery itself or a perception of the social problems which were to grow out of it. At the time the price of tobacco was declining rapidly and many planters were losing money. Feeling that their misfortunes arose from overproduction, which in turn was the result of the recent purchases of negroes, the colonial legislators decided to check the trade. "The great number of negroes imported here and solely employed in making tobacco," wrote Governor Spotswood in 1711, "hath produced for some years past an increase in tobacco far disproportionate to the consumption of it . . . and consequently lowered the price of it."<sup>43</sup> "The people of Virginia will not now be so fond of purchasing negroes as of late,"

declared President Jennings of the Virginia Council in 1708, "being sensibly convinced of their error, which has in a manner ruined the credit of the country."<sup>44</sup>

During the years from 1680 to 1700 slaves arrived in the colony in increasing numbers. In 1681 William Fitzhugh, in a letter to Ralph Wormeley, refers to the fact that several slave ships were expected that year in the York river.<sup>45</sup> At this period, for the first time in Virginia history, we find negroes in large numbers entered as headrights upon the patent rolls. In 1693 Captain John Storey received a grant of land for the importation of 79 negroes, in 1694 Robert Beverley brought in seventy, in 1695 William Randolph twenty-five.<sup>46</sup> Before the end of the century it is probable that the slaves in Virginia numbered nearly 6,000, and had already become more important to the economic life of the colony than the indentured servants.<sup>47</sup>

The chief purchasers at this time were men of large estates. The advantages of slave labor were manifest to planters of the type of William Byrd or William Fitzhugh, men who had built up fortunes by their business ability. It is but natural that they should have turned early from the indentured servant to stock their plantations with the cheaper and more remunerative African workers.

As the English secured a stronger hold upon the African trade slaves arrived in ever increasing numbers. During the years from 1699 to 1708 no less than 6,843 came in, a number perhaps exceeding the entire importations of the Seventeenth century.<sup>48</sup> In the summer of 1705 alone 1,800 negroes arrived.<sup>49</sup> With what rapidity the black man was taking the place of the indentured servant and the poor freeman as the chief laborer of the colony is shown by the fact that in 1708, in a total titheable list of 30,000, no less than 12,000 were slaves. President Jennings at the same time reported that

the number of servants was inconsiderable.<sup>50</sup> "Before the year 1680 what negroes came to Virginia were usually from Barbadoes," Jennings told the Board of Trade in 1708. "Between 1680 and 1698 the negro trade become more frequent, tho not in any proportion to what it hath been of late, during which the African Company have sent several ships and others by their licence having bought their slaves of the Company brought them here for sale, among which lately Alderman Jeffreys and Sir Jeffry Jeffreys were principally concerned."<sup>51</sup>

The wars of Charles XII, however, which proved disastrous to the Baltic trade, and the War of the Spanish Succession which cut off exports of tobacco to France and Spain, caused a serious decline in prices and made it impossible for the planters to continue the large purchases of slaves. This fact, together with the duty which had been imposed with the express purpose of keeping them out, reduced the importations to a minimum during the years from 1710 to 1718.<sup>52</sup> But with the reopening of the tobacco market and the return of prosperity to Virginia, the black stream set in again with redoubled force. In 1730, out of a total population of 114,000, no less than 30,000 were negroes.<sup>53</sup> In other words the slaves, who in 1670 had constituted but five per cent of the people, now comprised twenty-six per cent. Slavery, from being an insignificant factor in the economic life of the colony, had become the very foundation upon which it was established.

As we have seen it was not slavery but the protracted accumulation of surplus stocks of tobacco in England which had broken the long continued deadlock of the tobacco trade during the Restoration period and caused the overflow into continental markets. That the labor of blacks at first played no essential part in the movement is evident from the fact that in 1682 when it first became pronounced, the slave popula-

tion of Virginia and Maryland was still insignificant. But that the trade not only continued after the glut in England had been cleared up, but increased with startling rapidity, was unquestionably the result of more universal use of negroes in the years immediately preceding the War of the Spanish Succession. Slavery so cheapened the cost of production that it was now quite possible for those who used them to pay the half penny a pound duty on reëxported tobacco in England, and still undersell all rivals in the European market. Before many years had passed the tobacco trade, with all that it meant both to England and to the colonies, rested almost entirely upon the labor of the savage black man so recently brought from the African wilds.

That this fact was fully understood at the time is attested by various persons interested in the colony and the trade. In 1728 Francis Fane, in protesting against the imposition of a new tax in Virginia on the importation of slaves declared "that Laying a Duty on Negroes can only tend to make them scarcer and dearer, the two things that for the good of our Trade and for the Benefit of Virginia ought chiefly to be guarded against, since it is well known that the cheepness of Virginia tobacco in European Marketts is the true Cause of the great Consumption thereof in Europe, and one would have therefore Expected rather to have seen an Act allowing a premium on the Importation of Negroes to have Encouraged the bringing them in, than an Act laying so large a Duty to discourage their Importation."<sup>54</sup> Similarly Colonel Spencer wrote to the Board of Trade. "The low price of tobacco requires it should be made as cheap as possible. The Blacks can make it cheaper than Whites, so I conceive it is for his Majesty's interest full as much as the Country's or rather much more, to have Blacks as cheap as possible in Virginia."<sup>55</sup>

It is evident, then, that the opening of the European market

and the vast expansion of the tobacco trade, while bringing prosperity to the larger planters, was no great boon to the man who tilled his fields with his own hands. It assured him a ready sale for his crop, it is true, but at prices so low as to leave him a very narrow margin of profit. The new era which was opening, the so-called golden era of Virginia history, was not for him. Virginia in the Eighteenth century was to be the land of the slave holder, not of the little planter.

## *CHAPTER VIII*

### BENEATH THE BLACK TIDE

THE importation of slaves in large numbers reacted almost immediately upon the migration of whites to Virginia. As we have seen, the stream of indentured servants that poured across the Atlantic remained remarkably constant throughout almost all of the Seventeenth century. The larger planters were always in need of laborers, and they looked to the surplus population of England to supply them. But with the coming of the blacks all was changed. The Virginians saw in the slave ships which now so frequently entered their rivers the solution of all their problems. And so the influx of white men and women from the mother country dwindled and almost died out, while in its place came a still greater stream from the coast of Africa.

At the time of Bacon's Rebellion the annual importation of servants was between 1,500 and 2,000. The headrights for 1674 show 1931 names.<sup>1</sup> Seven years later the whites were still arriving in large numbers, the rolls for 1682 having 1,565 names. As the century drew to a close, however, the effect of the slave trade upon white immigration is reflected in the dwindling number of headrights. The change that was taking place is illustrated by a patent of 13,500 acres to Ralph Wormleley for the transportation of 249 persons, 149 of whom were white and 100 black.<sup>2</sup> Yet so late as 1704 the servants were still coming in appreciable numbers. In 1708 however, the number of servants at work in the colony had dwindled away almost entirely.<sup>3</sup> In 1715 the names of white persons listed as headrights was but ninety-one; in 1718 but 101.<sup>4</sup> In other

words, the first great migration of Englishmen to continental America, a migration extending over a century and comprising from 100,000 to 150,000 men, women and children, had practically come to an end.

English statesmen at the time looked upon this event as an unalloyed blessing. The day had passed when they felt that there existed a surplus of labor at home and that the country was in need of blood letting. The proper policy was to keep Englishmen in England, to devote their energies to local industries and so strengthen the economic and military sinews of the nation. And if unemployment existed, it was the correct policy to bring work to the idle rather than send the idle out of the country in quest of work.<sup>5</sup> And the colonies were to be utilized, no longer as outlets for the population, but as a means to the upbuilding of local industry. They were to supply a market for English goods, keep employed English mariners and furnish the tobacco and sugar which when re-exported weighed so heavily in the balance of trade. And since these great staple crops could be produced by the work of slaves, it was thought highly advantageous for all concerned that the negro should replace the white servant in both the tobacco and the sugar fields. The planters would profit by the lowered cost of production, English industry would gain by the increased volume of traffic, the Crown revenues would be enhanced and English laborers would be kept at home.<sup>6</sup>

Apparently the deeper significance of this great movement was entirely lost upon the British economists and ministers. They had no conception of the advantage of having their colonies inhabited by one race alone and that race their own. From the first their vision was too restricted to embrace the idea of a new and greater Britain in its fullest sense. They could not bring themselves to look upon the soil of Virginia and Maryland as a part of the soil of an extended

England, upon the Virginians and Marylanders as Englishmen, enjoying privileges equal to their own. They could not realize the strength that would come from such an empire as this, the mighty future it would insure to the Anglo-Saxon race.

Their conception was different. The British empire must consist of two distinct parts—mother country and colonies. And in any clash of interest between the two, the former must prevail. It was not their intent that the colonies should be purposely sacrificed, that they should be made to pay tribute to a tyrannical parent. In fact, they earnestly desired that the plantations should prosper, for when they languished English industry suffered. But in their eyes the colonies existed primarily for the benefit of England. England had given them birth, had defended them, had nurtured them; she was amply justified, therefore, in subordinating them to her own industrial needs.

Thus they viewed the substitution of the importation of slaves to the tobacco colonies for the importation of white men purely from an English, not an Anglo-Saxon, point of view. Had it been a question of bringing thousands of negroes to England itself to drive the white laborers from the fields, they would have interposed an emphatic veto. But with the structure of colonial life they were not greatly concerned. In 1693, when James Blair secured from the King and Queen a gift for his new college at Williamsburg, Attorney-General Seymour objected vigorously, stating that there was not the least occasion for such an institution in Virginia. Blair reminded him that the chief purpose of the college was to educate young men for the ministry and begged him to consider that the people of the colony had souls to be saved as well as the people of England. "Souls! Damn your souls," snapped the Attorney-General, "make tobacco." It would be unfair to say that

the British Government took just the same view of the colonists as did Seymour, but there can be no doubt that their chief concern in the plantations was centered upon the size of their exports to England and of their purchases of English goods. And as the slaves could make more tobacco than the indentured servants, it became the settled policy of the Crown to encourage the African trade in every possible way.

The influx of slaves not only put almost a complete end to the importation of white servants, but it reacted disastrously upon the Virginia yeomanry. In this respect we find a close parallel with the experience of ancient Rome with slave labor. In the third and second centuries before Christ the glory of the republic lay in its peasantry. The self-reliant, sturdy, liberty-loving yeoman formed the backbone of the conquering legion and added to the life of the republic that rugged strength that made it so irresistible. "To say that a citizen is a good farmer is to reach the extreme limit of praise," said Cato. Some of the ablest of the early Roman generals were recruited from the small farmer class. Fabius Maximus, the Dictator, in need of money, sent his son to Rome to sell his sole possession, a little farm of seven jugera. Regulus, while in Africa, asked that he be recalled from his command because the hired man he had left to cultivate his fields had fled with all his farm implements, and he feared his wife and children would starve.<sup>8</sup>

This vigorous peasantry was destroyed by the importation of hordes of slaves and the purchase of cheap foreign grain. So long as the wars of Rome were limited to Italy the number of slaves was comparatively small, but as her armies swept over the Mediterranean countries one after another and even subdued the wild Gauls and Britains, an unending stream of captives poured into the city and filled to overflowing the slave markets. Cicero, during his short campaign against the

Parthians wrote to Atticus that the sale of his prisoners had netted no less than 12,000,000 sestercias. In Epirus 100,000 men were captured; 60,000 Cimbries and 100,000 Germans graced the triumph of Marius; Caesar is said to have taken in Gaul another 100,000 prisoners. Soon the slave became the cheapest of commodities, and he who possessed even the most extensive lands could readily supply himself with the labor requisite for their cultivation.

Thus thrown into competition with slave labor the peasant proprietor found it impossible to sustain himself. The grain which he produced with his own hands had to compete in the same market with that made by slaves. It must, therefore, sell for the same price, a price so low that it did not suffice to feed and clothe him and his family. So he was forced to give up his little estate, an estate perhaps handed down to him by generations of farmers, and migrate to the city of Rome, to swell the idle and plebeian population. And once there he demanded bread, a demand which the authorities dared not refuse. So the public treasury laid out the funds for the purchase of wheat from all parts of the world, from Spain, from Africa, from Sicily, wheat which was given away or sold for a song. This in turn reacted unfavorably upon the peasants who still clung to the soil in a desperate effort to wring from it a bare subsistence, and accelerated the movement to the city.

Thus Italy was transformed from the land of the little farmer into the land of big estates cultivated by slaves. A sad development surely, a development which had much to do with the decay and final overthrow of the mighty structure of the Roman Empire. In former times, Titus Livius tells us, "there was a multitude of free men in this country where today we can hardly find a handful of soldiers, and which would be a wilderness were it not for our slaves." "The plough is

everywhere bereft of honor," wrote Virgil, while Lucian bewailed the departed peasants whose places were taken by fettered slaves.<sup>9</sup>

The importation of slaves to Virginia had somewhat similar results. While not destroying entirely the little farmer class, it exerted a baleful influence upon it, driving many families out of the colony, making the rich man richer, reducing the poor man to dire poverty. Against this unfortunate development the Virginia yeoman was helpless. Instinctively he must have felt that the slave was his enemy, and the hatred and rivalry which even today exists between the negro and the lowest class of whites, the so-called "poor white trash," dates back to the Seventeenth century.

The emigration of poor persons, usually servants just freed, from Virginia to neighboring colonies was well under way even at the time of Bacon's Rebellion. In 1677 complaint was made of "the inconvenience which arose from the neighborhood of Maryland and North Carolina," in that Virginia was daily deprived of its inhabitants by the removal of poor men hither. Runaway servants were welcomed in both places, it was asserted, while the debtor was accorded protection against prosecution.<sup>10</sup> This early emigration was caused, of course, not by the importation of slaves, for that movement had not yet assumed important proportions, but by the evil consequences of the Navigation Acts. The Virginia yeoman moved on to other colonies because he found it impossible to maintain himself at the current price of tobacco.

The continuance of the movement, for it persisted for a full half century, must be ascribed to the competition of negro labor. Like the Roman peasant, the Virginia yeoman, to an extent at least, found it impossible to maintain himself in the face of slave competition. The servant, upon the expiration of his term, no longer staked off his little farm and settled

down to a life of usefulness and industry. The poor planter who had not yet fully established himself, sold or deserted his fields and moved away in search of better opportunities and higher returns.

This migration was not the first of its kind in the English colonies, for the movement of Massachusetts congregations into the valley of the Connecticut antedated it by several decades. Yet it furnishes an interesting illustration of the lack of permanency in American life, of the facility with which populations urged on by economic pressure of one kind or another change localities. The great movement westward over the Appalachian range which followed the War of 1812, the pilgrimages of homesteaders to the northwest and the Pacific coast, find their precedent in the exodus of these poor families from the tobacco fields of Virginia.

In the last decade of the Seventeenth century the migration assumed such large proportions that the Board of Trade became alarmed and directed Francis Nicholson to enquire into its cause in order that steps might be taken to stop it. The emigrant stream that directed itself northward did not halt in eastern Maryland, for conditions there differed little from those in Virginia itself. The settlers went on to the unoccupied lands in the western part of the colony, or made their way into Delaware or Pennsylvania. "The reason why inhabitants leave this province," wrote Nicholson, while Governor of Maryland, "is, I think, the encouragement which they receive from the Carolinas, the Jerseys, and above all from Pennsylvania, which is so nigh that it is easy to remove thither. There handicraft tradesmen have encouragement when they endeavor to set up woolen manufactures."<sup>11</sup>

Although this explanation does not go to the root of the matter, it was in part correct. The northern colonies held out far greater opportunities for the poor man than the slave

choked fields of tidewater Maryland and Virginia. The industries of Pennsylvania and Delaware and the Jerseys demanded a certain degree of skill and yielded in return a very fair living. In other words, the poor settlers in Virginia, finding that tobacco culture was now based upon the cheap labor of African slaves, moved away to other localities where intelligence still brought an adequate reward.

The Maryland House of Delegates, when asked to give their opinion in this matter, thought that it was a desire to escape the payment of debts which made some of the "meaner inhabitants" seek shelter in Delaware Bay and the Carolinas. They came nearer the real cause when they added that the low price paid by the merchants for tobacco obliged many to leave.<sup>12</sup> Nicholson was not satisfied with this answer. "They will not directly own," he wrote, "that setting up manufactures and handicraft-trades in Pennsylvania, the large tracts of land held by some persons here and the encouragement given to illegal traders are the causes that make people leave this province. They would have it that they wish to avoid the persecution of their creditors, which causes them to shelter themselves among the inhabitants of the Lower Counties of Delaware Bay and of Carolina. The low price of tobacco has obliged many of the planters to try their fortune elsewhere, and the currency of money in Pennsylvania, which here is not, draws them to that province from this."<sup>13</sup>

In Virginia the difficulty of securing desirable land because of the large tracts patented by rich planters was usually assigned as the reason for the migration of poor families. This view of the matter was taken by Edward Randolph, the man who had won the undying hatred of the people of Massachusetts by his attempts to enforce the Navigation Acts there and by his attacks upon their charter. In 1696 Randolph did Virginia the honor of a visit, and although encountering there

none of the opposition which had so angered him in New England, he sent to the Board of Trade a memorial concerning the colony, criticising the government severely. It should be inquired into, he said, how it comes to pass that the colony (the first English settlement on the continent of America, begun above 80 years ago) is not better inhabited, considering what vast numbers of servants and others have yearly been transported thither. . . . The chief and only reason is the Inhabitants and Planters have been and at this time are discouraged and hindered from planting tobacco in that colony, and servants are not so willing to go there as formerly, because the members of the Council and others, who make an interest in the Government, have from time to time procured grants of very large Tracts of land, so that there has not for many years been any waste land to be taken up by those who bring with them servants, or by such Servants, who have served their time faithfully with their Masters, but it is taken up and ingrossed beforehand, whereby they are forced to hyer and pay a yearly rent for some of those Lands, or go to the utmost bounds of the Colony for Land, exposed to danger and often times proves the Occasion of Warr with the Indians.”<sup>14</sup>

For their large holdings the wealthy men paid not one penny of quit rents, Randolph said, and failed to comply with the regulations for seating new lands. The law demanded that upon receipt of a patent one must build a house upon the ground, improve and plant the soil and keep a good stock of cattle or hogs. But in their frontier holdings the wealthy men merely erected a little bark hut and turned two or three hogs into the woods by it. Or else they would clear one acre of land and plant a little Indian corn for one year, trusting that this evasion would square them with the letter of the law. By such means, Randolph adds, vast tracts were held, all of

which had been procured on easy terms and much by means of false certificates of rights. "Which drives away the inhabitants and servants, brought up only to planting, to seek their fortunes in Carolina or other places."<sup>15</sup>

Randolph suggested that the evil might be remedied by requiring a strict survey of lands in every county, by demanding all arrears of quit rents, by giving strict orders that in the future no grant should exceed 500 acres. These measures, he believed, would cause 100,000 acres to revert to the Crown, and "invite home those who for want of Land left Virginia." It would encourage other persons to come from neighboring colonies to take up holdings and "mighty increase the number of Planters." This would augment the production of tobacco by many thousands of hogsheads, stimulate trade and industry in England, and aid his Majesty's revenue.

The Board of Trade was deeply impressed. They wrote to Governor Andros explaining to him the substance of Randolph's report and asking what steps should be taken to remedy the evils he had pointed out. "But this seeming to us a matter of very great consequence," they added, "we have not been willing to meddle in it without your advice, which we now desire you to give fully and plainly." But Andros knew full well that it was no easy matter to make the large landowners disgorge. The thing had been attempted by Nicholson several years earlier, when suit was instituted against Colonel Lawrence Smith for arrears of quit rents upon tracts of land which had never been under cultivation.<sup>16</sup> But before the case came to trial Nicholson had been recalled and it was afterward compounded for a nominal sum. The proceedings had caused great resentment among the powerful clique which centered around the Council of State, and Andros was reluctant to re-open the matter. He knew of no frauds in granting patents of land, he wrote the Board, and could suggest no remedy

for what was past, "being a matter of Property." He agreed, however, that to limit the size of future patents would tend to "the more regular planting and thicker seating of the frontier lands."<sup>17</sup>

Consequently when Francis Nicholson was commissioned as Governor in 1698, he received strict instructions to advise with the Council and the Assembly upon this matter and to report back to the Board.<sup>18</sup> That nothing was accomplished, however, may clearly be inferred from a letter of a certain George Larkin written December 22, 1701. "There is no encouragement for anyone to come to the Plantation," he declared, "most of the land lying at all convenient being taken up. Some have 20,000, 30,000 or 40,000 acres, the greater part of which is unoccupied."<sup>19</sup> Two years later Nicholson himself wrote that certain recent grants were for ten or twenty thousand acres each, so that privileged persons had engrossed all the good land in those parts, by which means they kept others from settling it or else made them pay for it.<sup>20</sup>

Despite all the concern which this matter created, it is doubtful whether it was to any appreciable extent responsible for the continued emigration of poor families. The mere granting of patents for large tracts of land could not of itself fix the economic structure of the colony, could not, if all other conditions were favorable, prevent the establishment of small freeholds. Rather than have their fields lie idle while the poor men who should have been cultivating them trooped out of the colony, the rich would gladly have sold them in small parcels at nominal prices. In the first half century after the settlement at Jamestown, as we have seen, such a breakup of extensive holdings into little farms actually occurred. Had similar conditions prevailed in the later period a like development would have followed. But in 1630 or 1650, when slaves were seldom employed and when tobacco was high, the poor

man's toil yielded a return so large that he could well afford to purchase a little farm and make himself independent. In 1680 or 1700, in the face of the competition of slave labor, he was almost helpless. Even had he found a bit of unoccupied ground to which he could secure a title, he could not make it yield enough to sustain him and his family.<sup>21</sup>

In 1728 Governor Gooch wrote the Board of Trade that the former belief that large holdings of frontier land had been an impediment to settlement was entirely erroneous. It was his opinion, in fact, that extensive grants made it to the interest of the owners to bring in settlers and so populate the country. In confirmation of this he pointed to the fact that Spotsylvania country, where many large patents had been issued, had filled up more rapidly than Brunswick, where they had been restricted in size.<sup>22</sup>

In the first decade of the new century the emigration out of the tobacco colonies continued without abatement. With another disastrous decline in the price of tobacco following the outbreak of the wars of Charles XII and Louis XIV, so many families moved over the border that the Board of Trade, once more becoming seriously alarmed, questioned the Council as to the causes of the evil and what steps should be taken to remedy it. In their reply the Councillors repeated the old arguments, declaring that the lack of land in Virginia and the immunity of debtors from prosecution in the proprietary colonies were responsible for the movement. But they touched the heart of the matter in their further statement that the great stream of negroes that was pouring into the colony had so increased the size of the tobacco crop that prices had declined and the poor found it difficult to subsist. Not only "servants just free go to North Carolina," they wrote, "but old planters whose farms are worn out."<sup>23</sup>

A year later President Jennings stated that the migration

was continuing and that during the summer of 1709 "many entire families" had moved out of the colony.<sup>24</sup> In fact, although but few indentured servants arrived from England after the first decade of the century, poor whites were still departing for the north or for western Carolina so late as 1730. William Byrd II tells us that in 1728, when he was running the dividing line between Virginia and North Carolina, he was entertained by a man who "was lately removed, Bag and Baggage from Maryland, thro a strong Antipathy he had to work and paying his Debts." Indeed he thought it a "thorough Aversion to Labor" which made "People file off to North Carolina."<sup>25</sup>

It is impossible to estimate the numbers involved in this movement, but they must have run into the thousands. For a full half century a large proportion of the white immigrants to Virginia seem to have remained there for a comparatively short time only, then to pass on to other settlements. And the migration to Virginia during these years we know to have comprised not less than thirty or thirty-five thousand persons. In fact, it would seem that this movement out of the older colony must have been a very important factor in the peopling of its neighbors, not only western Carolina and western Maryland, but Delaware and Pennsylvania.

Though many thus fled before the stream of negroes which poured in from Africa, others remained behind to fight for their little plantations. Yet they waged a losing battle. Those who found it possible to purchase slaves, even one or two, could ride upon the black tide, but the others slowly sank beneath it.

During the first half of the Eighteenth century the poor whites sought to offset the cheapness of slave made tobacco by producing themselves only the highest grades. The traders who dealt in the finest Orinoco, which brought the best prices,

found it not upon the plantations of the wealthy, but of those who tended their plants with their own hands. "I must beg you to remember that the common people make the best," wrote Governor Gooch to the Lords of Trade in 1731.<sup>26</sup>

In fact, the wealthy planter, with his newly acquired gangs of slaves, found it difficult at this time to produce any save the lower grades of tobacco. The African was yet too savage, too untutored in the ways of civilization to be utilized for anything like intensive cultivation. "Though they may plant more in quantity," wrote Gooch, "yet it frequently proves very mean stuff, different from the Tobacco produced from well improved and well tended Grounds." "Yet the rich Man's trash will always damp the Market," he adds, "and spoil the poor Man's good Tobacco which has been carefully managed."<sup>27</sup> Thus the small farmer made one last desperate effort to save himself by pitting his superior intelligence against the cheapness of slave labor.

But his case was hopeless. As slavery became more and more fixed upon the colony, the negro gradually increased in efficiency. He learned to speak his master's language, brokenly of course, but well enough for all practical purposes. He was placed under the tutelage of overseers, who taught him the details of his work and saw that he did it. He became a civilized being, thoroughly drilled in the one task required of him, the task of producing tobacco. Thus the rich planter soon found it possible to cultivate successfully the higher grades, and so to drive from his last rampart the white free-holder whose crop was tended by himself alone.

Placed at so great a disadvantage, the poor man, at all times in very difficult circumstances, found it almost impossible to exist whenever conditions in Europe sent the price of tobacco down. In the years from 1706 to 1714, when the tobacco trade was interrupted by the wars of Charles XII in the Baltic

region and the protracted struggle known as the War of the Spanish Succession, he was reduced to the utmost extremities.

Virginia and Maryland were learning that a prosperity founded upon one crop which commanded a world market was in unsettled times subject to serious setbacks. It was a long cry from the James and the Potomac to the Baltic ports, yet the welfare of the Virginia and Maryland planters was in no small degree dependent upon the maintenance of peaceful conditions in Poland and Sweden and Russia. A war which seriously curtailed the exportation of English leaf to the northern countries would inevitably react on the price and so bring misfortune to the colonial planters. When called before the Board of Trade to testify as to the decay of the tobacco trade, the manufacturer John Linton declared that the Baltic countries, which formerly had purchased thousands of hogsheads a year, now took comparatively few. "The Russian trade is ruined," he said.<sup>28</sup>

The war against France and Spain, coming at this unfortunate juncture, still further restricted the market, sent prices down to new depths and filled to overflowing the planters' cup of misfortune. "The war has stopped the trade with Spain, France, Flanders and part of the Baltic," Colonel Quary reported in a memorial to the Board of Trade, "which took off yearly 20,000 hogsheads of tobacco. Now our best foreign market is Holland."<sup>29</sup> The pamphlet entitled *The Present State of the Tobacco Plantations in America* stated, in 1708, that France and Spain alone had imported 20,000 hogsheads, but that both were now otherwise supplied. "The troubles in Sweden, Poland, Russia, etc., have prevented the usual exportation of great quantities to those ports. Virginia and Maryland have severely felt the loss of such exportation, having so far reduced the planters that for several years past the whole product of their tobacco would hardly clothe the servants that made it."<sup>30</sup>

Their misfortunes were accentuated by the fact that the Dutch took advantage of the European upheavals to gain control of a part of the tobacco trade. Upon the outbreak of the war with Louis XIV, England prohibited the exportation of tobacco either to France or to Spain, but Holland, despite her participation in the struggle, apparently took no such action. On the contrary she strained every nerve to entrench herself in the markets of her ally before peace should once more open the flood gates to Virginia and Maryland tobacco. With this in view the acreage in Holland devoted to the cultivation of the leaf was rapidly extended. "The Dutch are improving and increasing their tobacco plantations," wrote John Linton in 1706. "In 1701 they produced only 18,000 hogsheads. Last year it was 33,500 hogsheads." Plantations at Nimwegen, Rhenen, Amersfoort and Nijkerk turned out 13,400,000 pounds, while great quantities were raised on the Main, in Higher Germany and in Prussia.<sup>31</sup>

The Dutch mixed their own leaf with that of Virginia and Maryland in the proportion of four to one, subjected it to a process of manufacture and sent it out to all the European markets.<sup>32</sup> In 1707 a letter to John Linton stated that they had from thirty to forty houses for "making up tobacco in rolls," employing 4,000 men, besides great numbers of women and girls. Their Baltic exports were estimated at 12,350,000 pounds; 2,500,000 pounds to Norway, 1,500,000 to Jutland and Denmark, 4,000,000 to Sweden, 2,350,000 to Lapland, 2,000,000 to Danzig and Königsberg.<sup>33</sup>

With the continuation of the war on the continent Dutch competition became stronger and stronger. In 1714, when peace was at last in prospect, they seemed thoroughly entrenched in many of the markets formerly supplied by the English. "The planting of tobacco in Holland, Germany, Etc.," it was reported to the Board of Trade, "is increased to

above four times what it was 20 years ago, and amounts now to as much as is made in both Virginia and Maryland." The tobacco trade, which had formerly produced some £250,000 in the balance of trade, had declined to about half that figure, exports of manufactured goods to the Chesapeake were rapidly dwindling, the number of ships engaged in carrying tobacco was greatly reduced, the merchants were impoverished, the planters were ruined.<sup>34</sup>

"It is hardly possible to imagine a more miserable spectacle than the poorer sort of inhabitants in this colony," the Council wrote in 1713, "whose labour in tobacco has not for several years afforded them clothing to shelter them from the violent colds as well as heats to both which this climate is subject in the several seasons. The importation of British and other European commodities by the merchants, whereby the planters were formerly well supplied with clothing, is now in a manner wholly left off and the small supplies still ventured sold at such prodigious rates as they please. Many families formerly well clothed and their houses well furnished are now reduced to rags and all the visible marks of poverty."<sup>35</sup>

This unfortunate period was but temporary. With the conclusion of peace English tobacco was dumped upon the European market at a figure so low as to defy competition. And when once the hogsheads began to move, the reaction on Virginia and Maryland was rapid and pronounced. Soon prices rose again to the old levels, and the colony entered upon a period, for the larger planters at least, of unprecedented prosperity.<sup>36</sup> But the eight years of hardship and poverty made a lasting imprint upon the poorest class of whites. Coming as they did upon the heels of the first great wave of negro immigration, they accelerated the movement of the disrupting forces already at work. It was not by accident that the largest migration of whites to other settlements occurred just at this

time and that the inquiries as to its cause are most frequent. The little planter class never fully recovered from the blow dealt it by the temporary loss of the larger part of the European tobacco trade.

The small freeholders who possessed neither servants nor slaves did not disappear entirely, but they gradually declined in numbers and sank into abject poverty. During the period of Spotswood's administration they still constituted a large part of the population. The tax list for 1716 in Lancaster, one of the older counties, shows that of 314 persons listed as tithables, 202 paid for themselves only<sup>37</sup>. Making ample deductions for persons not owning land it would appear that more than half the planters at this date still tilled their fields only with their own labor. At the time of the American Revolution, however, the situation had changed materially, and a decided dwindling of the poor farmer class is noticeable. In Gloucester county the tax lists for 1782-83 show 490 white families, of which 320 were in possession of slaves. Of the 170 heads of families who possessed no negroes, since no doubt some were overseers, some artisans, some professional men, it is probable that not more than eighty or ninety were proprietors.<sup>38</sup> In Spotsylvania county similar conditions are noted. Of 704 titheable whites listed in 1783 all save 199 possessed slaves.<sup>39</sup> In Dinwiddie county, in the year 1782, of 843 titheable whites, 210 only were not slave holders.<sup>40</sup> Apparently the Virginia yeoman, the sturdy, independent farmer of the Seventeenth century, who tilled his little holding with his own hands, had become an insignificant factor in the life of the colony. The glorious promises which the country had held out to him in the first fifty years of its existence had been belied. The Virginia which had formerly been so largely the land of the little farmer, had become the land of masters and slaves. For aught else there was no room.

Before the end of the Eighteenth century the condition of the poorest class had become pitiable. The French philosopher Chastellux who spent much time in Virginia during the American Revolution testifies to their extreme misery. "It is there that I saw poor persons for the first time since crossing the ocean," he says. "In truth, near these rich plantations, in which the negro alone is unhappy, are often found miserable huts inhabited by whites whose wan faces and ragged garments give testimony to their poverty."<sup>41</sup>

Philip Fithian, in his *Journal*, describes the habits of this class and is vigorous in his condemnation of the brutal fights which were so common among them. "In my opinion animals which seek after and relish such odious and filthy amusements are not of the human species," he says, "they are destitute of the remotest pretension of humanity."<sup>42</sup> Even the negroes of the wealthy regarded these persons with contempt, a contempt which they were at no pains to conceal.

The traveller Smyth thought them "kind, hospitable and generous," but illiberal, noisy and rude," and much "addicted to inebriety and averse to labor." This class, he says, "who ever compose the bulk of mankind, are in Virginia more few in numbers, in proportion to the rest of the inhabitants, than perhaps in any other country in the universe."<sup>43</sup>

But it must not be imagined that slavery drove out or ruined the entire class of small farmers, leaving Virginia alone to the wealthy. In fact, most of those who were firmly established remained, finding their salvation in themselves purchasing slaves. Few indeed had been able to avail themselves of the labor of indentured servants; the cost of transportation was too heavy, the term too short, the chances of sickness or desertion too great. But with the influx of thousands of negroes, the more enterprising and industrious of the poor planters quite frequently made purchases. Although the initial outlay

was greater, they could secure credit by pledging their farms and their crops, and in the end the investment usually paid handsome dividends and many who could not raise the money to buy a full grown negro, often found it possible to secure a child, which in time would become a valuable asset.

This movement may readily be traced by an examination of the tax lists and county records of the Eighteenth century. In Lancaster even so early as 1716 we find that the bulk of the slaves were in the hands, not of wealthy proprietors, but of comparatively poor persons. Of the 314 taxpayers listed, 113 paid for themselves alone, 94 for two only, 37 for three, 22 for four, thirteen for five, while thirty-five paid for more than five. As there were but few servants in the colony at this time it may be taken for granted that the larger part of the tithables paid for by others were negro slaves. It would seem, then, that of some 200 slave owners in this country, about 165 possessed from one to four negroes only. There were but four persons listed as having more than twenty slaves, William Ball with 22, Madam Fox with 23, William Fox with 25 and Robert Carter with 126.<sup>44</sup>

Nor did the class of little slave holders melt away as time passed. In fact they continued to constitute the bulk of the white population of Virginia for a century and a half, from the beginning of the Eighteenth century until the conquest of the State by Federal troops in 1865. Thus we find that of 633 slave owners in Dinwiddie county in 1782, 95 had one only, 66 had two, 71 three, 45 four, 50 five, making an aggregate of 327, or more than half of all the slave holders, who possessed from one to five negroes.<sup>45</sup> In Spotsylvania there were, in 1783, 505 slave owners, of whom 78 possessed one each, 54 two, 44 three, 41 four, and 30 five each. Thus 247, or nearly 49 per cent of the slave holders, had from one to five slaves only. One hundred and sixteen, or 23 per cent, had

from six to ten inclusive.<sup>46</sup> The Gloucester lists for 1783 show similar conditions. There were in this country 320 slave holders, having 3,314 negroes, an average of about  $10\frac{1}{3}$  for each owner. Fifty had one each, 41 had two each, 9 had three, 30 had four and twenty-six had five. Thus 156, or about half of all the owners, had from one to five slaves.<sup>47</sup> In Princess Anne county, of a total of 388 slave owners, 100 had one each, 56 had two each and forty-five had three each.<sup>48</sup>

Records of transfers of land tend to substantiate this testimony, by showing that the average holdings at all times in the Eighteenth century were comparatively small. In the years from 1722 to 1729 Spotsylvania was a new county, just opened to settlers, and a large part of its area had been granted in large tracts to wealthy patentees. Yet the deed book for these years shows that it was actually settled, not by these men themselves, but by a large number of poor planters. Of the 197 transfers of land recorded, 44 were for 100 acres or less and 110 for 300 acres or less. The average deed was for 487 acres. As some of the transfers were obviously made for speculative purposes and not with the intent of putting the land under cultivation, even this figure is misleading. The average farm during the period was probably not in excess of 400 acres. One of the most extensive dealers in land in Spotsylvania was Larkin Chew who secured a patent for a large tract and later broke it up into many small holdings which were sold to new settlers.<sup>49</sup>

This substitution of the small slave holder for the man who used only his own labor in the cultivation of his land unquestionably saved the class of small proprietors from destruction. Without it all would have been compelled to give up their holdings in order to seek their fortunes elsewhere, or sink to the condition of "poor white trash." Yet the movement was in many ways unfortunate. It made the poor man less in-

dustrious and thrifty. Formerly he had known that he could win nothing except by the sweat of his brow, but now he was inclined to let the negro do the work. Slavery cast a stigma upon labor which proved almost as harmful to the poor white man as did negro competition. Work in the tobacco fields was recognized as distinctly the task of an inferior race, a task not in keeping with the dignity of freemen.

Jefferson states that few indeed of the slave owners were ever seen to work. "For in a warm climate," he adds, "no man will labour for himself who can make another labour for him."<sup>50</sup> Chastellux noted the same tendency, declaring "that the indolence and dissipation of the middling and lower classes of white inhabitants of Virginia is such as to give pain to every reflecting mind."<sup>51</sup>

Slavery developed in the small farmers a spirit of pride and haughtiness that was unknown to them in the Seventeenth century. Every man, no matter how poor, was surrounded by those to whom he felt himself superior, and this gave him a certain self-esteem. Smyth spoke of the middle class as generous, friendly and hospitable in the extreme, but possessing a rudeness and haughtiness which was the result of their "general intercourse with slaves."<sup>52</sup> Beverley described them as haughty and jealous of their liberties, and so impatient of restraint that they could hardly bear the thought of being controlled by any superior power. Hugh Jones, Anbury, Fithian and other Eighteenth century writers all confirm this testimony.

Despite the persistence of the small slave holder it is obvious that there were certain forces at work tending to increase the number of well-to-do and wealthy planters. Now that the labor problem, which in the Seventeenth century had proved so perplexing, had finally been solved, there was no limit to the riches that might be acquired by business acumen,

industry and good management. And as in the modern industrial world the large corporation has many advantages over the smaller firms, so in colonial Virginia the most economical way of producing tobacco was upon the large plantations.

The wealthy man had the advantage of buying and selling in bulk, he enjoyed excellent credit and could thus often afford to withhold his crop from the market when prices were momentarily unfavorable, he could secure the best agricultural instruments. Most important of all, however, was the fact that he could utilize the resources of his plantation for the production of crude manufactured supplies, thus to a certain extent freeing himself from dependence upon British imports and keeping his slaves at work during all seasons of the year. Before the Eighteenth century had reached its fifth decade every large plantation had become to a remarkable degree self-sustaining. Each numbered among its working force various kinds of mechanics—coopers, blacksmiths, tanners, carpenters, shoemakers, distillers. These men could be set to work whenever the claims of the tobacco crop upon their time were not imperative producing many of the coarser articles required upon the plantation, articles which the poor farmer had to import from England. For this work white men were at first almost universally made use of, but in time their places were taken by slaves. "Several of them are taught to be sawyers, carpenters, smiths, coopers, &c.," says the historian Hugh Jones, "though for the most part they be none of the aptest or nicest."<sup>58</sup>

The carpenter was kept busy constructing barns and servants' quarters, or repairing stables, fences, gates and wagons. The blacksmith was called upon to shoe horses, to keep in order ploughs, hinges, sickles, saws, perhaps even to forge outright such rough iron ware as nails, chains and hoes. The

cooper made casks in which to ship the tobacco crop, barrels for flour and vats for brandy and cider. The tanner prepared leather for the plantation and the cobbler fashioned it into shoes for the slaves. Sometimes there were spinners, weavers and knitters who made coarse cloth both for clothing and for bedding. The distiller every season made an abundant supply of cider, as well as apple, peach and persimmon brandy.

And the plantation itself provided the materials for this varied manufacture. The woods of pine, chestnut and oak yielded timber for houses and fuel for the smithy. The herd of cattle supplied hides for the tanner. The cloth makers got cotton, flax and hemp from the planter's own fields, and wool from his sheep. His orchard furnished apples, grapes, peaches in quantities ample for all the needs of the distiller. In other words, the large planter could utilize advantageously the resources at hand in a manner impossible for his neighbor who could boast of but a small farm and half a score of slaves.<sup>54</sup>

It was inevitable, then, that the widespread use of slave labor would result in the gradual multiplication of well-to-do and wealthy men. In the Seventeenth century not one planter in fifty could be classed as a man of wealth, and even so late as 1704 the number of the well-to-do was very narrowly limited. In a report to the Lords of Trade written in that year Colonel Quary stated that upon each of the four great rivers of Virginia there resided from "ten to thirty men who by trade and industry had gotten very competent estates."<sup>55</sup> Fifty years later the number had multiplied several times over.

Thus in Gloucester county in 1783, of 320 slave holders no less than 57 had sixteen or more. Of these one possessed 162, one 138, one 93, one 86, one 63, one 58, two 57, one 56, one 43 and one 40.<sup>56</sup> In Spotsylvania, of 505 owners, 76 had sixteen or more. Of these Mann Page, Esq., had 157, Mrs. Mary Daingerfield had 71, William Daingerfield 61, Alexander

Spotswood 60, William Jackson 49, George Stubblefield 42,  
Frances Marewither 40, William Jones 39.<sup>57</sup>

The Dinwiddie tax lists for 1783 show that of 633 slave holders, no less than 60 had twenty-one or more negroes. Among the more important of these were Robert Turnbull with 81, Colonel John Banister with 88, Colonel William Diggs with 72, John Jones with 69, Mrs. Mary Bolling with 51, Robert Walker with 52, Winfield Mason with 40, John Burwell with 42, Gray Briggs with 43, William Yates with 55, Richard Taliaferro with 43, Major Thomas Scott with 57, Francis Muir with 47.<sup>58</sup> The wealth of the larger planters is also shown by the large number of coaches recorded in these lists, which including phaetons, chariots and chairs, aggregated 180 wheels.

Thus it was that the doors of opportunity opened wide to the enterprising and industrious of the middle class, and many availed themselves of it to acquire both wealth and influence. Smyth tells us that at the close of the colonial period there were many planters whose fortunes were "superior to some of the first rank," but whose families were "not so ancient nor respectable."<sup>59</sup> It was the observation of Anbury that gentlemen of good estates were more numerous in Virginia than in any other province of America.<sup>60</sup>

In fact the Eighteenth century was the golden age of the Virginia slave holders. It was then that they built the handsome homes once so numerous in the older counties, many of which still remain as interesting monuments of former days; it was then that they surrounded themselves with graceful furniture and costly silverware, in large part imported from Great Britain; it was then that they collected paintings and filled their libraries with the works of standard writers; it was then that they purchased coaches and berlins; it was

then that men and women alike wore rich and expensive clothing.

This movement tended to widen the influence of the aristocracy and at the same time to eliminate any sharp line of demarkation between it and the small slave holders. There was now only a gradual descent from the wealthiest to the poor man who had but one slave. The Spotsylvania tax lists for 1783 show 247 slaveholders owning from one to five negroes, 116 owning from six to ten inclusive, 66 owning from eleven to fifteen inclusive, and seventy-six owning more than fifteen.<sup>61</sup> In Gloucester 156 had from one to five slaves, 66 from five to ten inclusive, 41 from eleven to fifteen inclusive, and fifty-seven over fifteen. Thus in a very true sense the old servant holding aristocracy had given way to a vastly larger slave holding aristocracy.

It is this fact which explains the decline in power and influence of the Council in Virginia, which was so notable in the Eighteenth century. This body had formerly been representative of a small clique of families so distinct from the other planters and possessed of such power in the government as to rival the nobility of England itself. Now, however, as this distinction disappeared, the Council sank in prestige because it represented nothing, while the House of Burgesses became the mouthpiece of the entire slave holding class, and thus the real power in the colonial Government.

Historians have often expressed surprise at the small number of Tories in Virginia during the American Revolution. The aristocratic type of society would naturally lead one to suppose that a large proportion of the leading families would have remained loyal to the Crown. Yet with very few exceptions all supported the cause of freedom and independence, even though conscious of the fact that by so doing they were jeopardizing not only the tobacco trade which was the basis

of their wealth, but the remnants of their social and political privileges in the colony. When the British Ministry tried to wring from the hands of the Assembly the all-important control over taxation which all knew to be the very foundation of colonial self-government, every planter, the largest as well as the smallest, felt himself aggrieved, for this body was the depository of his power and the guardian of his interests. A hundred years before, when the commons rose against the oppression and tyranny of the Government, the wealthy men rallied to the support of Sir William Berkeley and remained loyal to him throughout all his troubles. In 1775 there was no such division of the people; the planters were almost a unit in the defense of rights which all held in common.

It is obvious, then, that slavery worked a profound revolution in the social, economic and political life of the colony. It practically destroyed the Virginia yeomanry, the class of small planters who used neither negroes nor servants in the cultivation of their fields, the class which produced the bulk of the tobacco during the Seventeenth century and constituted the chief strength of the colony. Some it drove into exile, either to the remote frontiers or to other colonies; some it reduced to extreme poverty; some it caused to purchase slaves and so at one step to enter the exclusive class of those who had others to labor for them. Thus it transformed Virginia from a land of hardworking, independent peasants, to a land of slaves and slave holders. The small freeholder was not destroyed, as was his prototype of ancient Rome, but he was subjected to a change which was by no means fortunate or wholesome. The wealthy class, which had formerly consisted of a narrow clique closely knit together by family ties, was transformed into a numerous body, while all sharp line of demarkation between it and the poorer slave holders was wiped out. In short, the Virginia of the Eighteenth century, the

Virginia of Gooch and Dinwiddie and Washington and Jefferson, was fundamentally different from the Virginia of the Seventeenth century, the Virginia of Sir William Berkeley and Nathaniel Bacon. Slavery had wrought within the borders of the Old Dominion a profound and far reaching revolution.

## NOTES TO CHAPTER I

<sup>1</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, A True Declaration, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> Purchas, Vol. XVIII, pp. 437-438.

<sup>3</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, A True Declaration, p. 23.

<sup>4</sup> Alexander Brown, The Genesis of the United States, Vol. I, p. 37.

<sup>5</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. I, Nova Brittania, pp. 21-22.

<sup>6</sup> Hakluyt, Discourse, pp. 89-90.

<sup>7</sup> Hakluyt, Discourse, p. 105.

<sup>8</sup> Hakluyt, Discourse, p. 31.

<sup>9</sup> Hakluyt, Discourse, pp. 14-15.

<sup>10</sup> Alexander Brown, The First Republic in America, p. 49.

<sup>11</sup> Alexander Brown, The Genesis of the United States, Vol. I, p. 349; Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. I, Nova Brittania, pp. 16-17.

<sup>12</sup> Alexander Brown, The Genesis of the United States, Vol. I, p. 239.

<sup>13</sup> Alexander Brown, The Genesis of the United States, Vol. I, p. 202.

<sup>14</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 445.

<sup>15</sup> Neill, The Virginia Company of London, p. 338.

<sup>16</sup> Randolph Manuscript, p. 212.

<sup>17</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 440; Alexander Brown, The Genesis of the United States, Vol. I, p. 239.

<sup>18</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 441.

<sup>19</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 443.

## NOTES TO CHAPTER II

<sup>1</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. I, p. 161. Alexander Brown, The First Republic in America, p. 232.

<sup>2</sup> William Strachey, Historie of Travaille into Virginia Britan nia, p. 121; P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. I, p. 162.

- <sup>3</sup> Ralph Hamor, *True Discourse*, pp. 24, 34.
- <sup>4</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 79.
- <sup>5</sup> Edward Arber, *The Works of Captain John Smith*, p. 535.
- <sup>6</sup> Alexander Brown, *The First Republic in America*, p. 268.
- <sup>7</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 87.
- <sup>8</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 81.
- <sup>9</sup> Alexander Brown, *The First Republic in America*, p. 268.
- <sup>10</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IX, pp. 40-41.
- <sup>11</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IX, pp. 176-177.
- <sup>12</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 416.
- <sup>13</sup> Alexander Brown, *The Genesis of the United States*, Vol. I, pp. 355-356.
- <sup>14</sup> The lack of towns in Virginia was a source of great regret to the English Government, and more than once attempts were made to create them by artificial means.
- <sup>15</sup> Even at the end of the Seventeenth century the average price for land in the older counties was about thirty pounds of tobacco an acre.
- <sup>16</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 578; Vol. II, p. 48.
- <sup>17</sup> It was Chanco, an Indian boy living with a Mr. Pace, who revealed the plot to massacre the whites in 1622, and so saved the colony from destruction. Edward Arber, *The Works of Captain John Smith*, p. 578.
- <sup>18</sup> P. A. Bruce, *The Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 70.
- <sup>19</sup> For a full discussion of this matter see p. —.
- <sup>20</sup> Hakluyt, Vol. VII, p. 286.
- <sup>21</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 582.
- <sup>22</sup> Abstracts of Proceedings of Virginia Company of London, Vol. I, pp. 28, 172; Edward Arber, *The Works of Captain John Smith*, p. 609.
- <sup>23</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. II, p. 510.
- <sup>24</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 603.
- <sup>25</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 605.
- <sup>26</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Vol. V, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>27</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. II, p. 510.
- <sup>28</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I; p. 611.

<sup>29</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to the Board of Trade.

<sup>30</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Orders and Constitutions, 1619, 1620, p. 22.

<sup>31</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

<sup>32</sup> Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1574-1660, p. 208.

<sup>33</sup> Princeton Transcripts, Virginia Land Patents, Princeton University Library.

<sup>34</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

### NOTES TO CHAPTER III

<sup>1</sup> L. G. Tyler, *Narratives of Early Virginia*, pp. 21-22.

<sup>2</sup> Abstracts of Proceedings of Virginia Company of London, Vol. II, p. 171.

<sup>3</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to Board of Trade.

<sup>4</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. I, p. 257.

<sup>5</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. I, p. 411.

<sup>6</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. I, p. 539.

<sup>7</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to Board of Trade.

<sup>8</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

<sup>9</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 595.

<sup>10</sup> J. C. Hotten, *Original Lists of Emigrants to America (1600-1700)*.

<sup>11</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, p. 3.

<sup>12</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to Board of Trade.

<sup>13</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, p. 119, *Colonial Entry Book*, Governor Andros to the Lords of Trade.

<sup>14</sup> E. D. Neill, *Virginia Vetusta*, p. 123.

<sup>15</sup> Hugh Jones, *Present State of Virginia*, p. 61.

<sup>16</sup> Surry County Records, 1684-1686, Virginia State Library.

<sup>17</sup> York County Records, 1696-1701, Virginia State Library.

<sup>18</sup> Rappahannock County Deeds, 1680-1688, Virginia State Library.

<sup>19</sup> Essex County, Orders, Deeds, Etc., 1692-1695, Virginia State Library.

- <sup>20</sup> J. C. Hotten, *Original Lists of Emigrants to America*, pp. 266-275.
- <sup>21</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, pp. 529-532.
- <sup>22</sup> *Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office*, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>23</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. I, p. 30.
- <sup>24</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. XII, p. 387.
- <sup>25</sup> *Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office*, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>26</sup> *Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office*, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>27</sup> *Essex County, Orders, Deeds, Etc., 1692-1695*, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>28</sup> *Surry County Records, 1645-1672*, p. 17.
- <sup>29</sup> *Essex County, Orders, Deeds, Etc., 1692-1695*, p. 348, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>30</sup> *Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office*, Virginia State Capitol, Vol. V.
- <sup>31</sup> *Essex County, Orders, Deeds, Etc., 1692-1695*, pp. 199, 202, 205, 209, 216, 348, 394, 407, 413, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>32</sup> H. R. McIlwaine, *Journals of the House of Burgesses, 1686*, p. 37.
- <sup>33</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 91-92, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>34</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1306, Document 116, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>35</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1355, p. 361, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>36</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 91-92, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>37</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1405, p. 460, Council Minutes, 1680-1695.
- <sup>38</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1405, pp. 544-545, Council Minutes, 1680-1695.
- <sup>39</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, p. 345, Colonial Entry Book, 1696-1700.
- <sup>40</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1339, Document 33V. Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>41</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1314, Document 63VIII, Correspondence of the Board of Trade. A copy of this interest-

ing document is published as an appendix to this volume.

<sup>42</sup> See appendix.

<sup>43</sup> See appendix.

<sup>44</sup> Of this land 15 acres belonged to Thomas Jefferson, probably the grandfather of President Jefferson.

<sup>45</sup> In the opening years of the Eighteenth century the increased importation of slaves brought about an immediate decline in the migration of whites to Virginia from England.

<sup>46</sup> Hening, Statutes at Large, Vol. II, p. 480. The laws governing the tithables were altered slightly from time to time.

<sup>47</sup> Surry County, Wills, Deeds, Etc., 1671-1684, pp. 134-138, Virginia State Library.

<sup>48</sup> Surry County, Wills, Deeds, Etc., 1671-1684, pp. 134-138, Virginia State Library.

<sup>49</sup> Surry County, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1684-1686, pp. 59-63, Virginia State Library.

<sup>50</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. I, pp. 364-373.

<sup>51</sup> Prince George county was formed out of Charles City in 1703.

<sup>52</sup> Surry County, Wills, Deeds, Etc., 1671-1684; Surry County, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1684-1686, Virginia State Library.

<sup>53</sup> Elizabeth City County Records, 1684-1699, Virginia State Library.

#### NOTES TO CHAPTER IV

<sup>1</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VIII, p. 273.

<sup>2</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VIII, p. 273.

<sup>3</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 42.

<sup>4</sup> Robert Beverley, History of Virginia, p. 221.

<sup>5</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 11.

<sup>6</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXVI, p. 31.

<sup>7</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 11.

<sup>8</sup> In fact, it was stated by John Hammond in 1656 that many servants acquired considerable property even before the expiration of their indentures. "Those servants that will be industrious may in their time of service gain a competent estate before their Freedomes," he says, "which is usually done by many, and they gaine esteeme and assistance that appear so industrious:

There is no master almost but will allow his Servant a parcell of clear ground to plant some tobacco in for himselfe, which he may husband at those many idle times he hath allowed him and not prejudice, but rejoice his Master to see it, which in time of Shipping he may lay out for commodities, and in Summer sell them again with advantage, and get a Sow-Pig or two, which any body almost will give him, and his Master suffer him to keep them with his own, which will be no charge to his Master, and with one year's increase of them may purchase a Cow calf or two, and by that time he is for himself; he may have Cattle, Hogs and Tobacco of his own, and come to live gallantly; but this must be gained (as I said) by Industry and affability, not by sloth nor churlish behaviour." Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 14.

<sup>9</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IV, p. 157.

<sup>10</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 262.

<sup>11</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 261.

<sup>12</sup> R. L. Beer, *Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 154.

<sup>13</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 160.

<sup>14</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. XIII, p. 381.

<sup>15</sup> Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, pp. 4-6.

<sup>16</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-21, Secretary Ludwell to Lord John Berkeley.

<sup>17</sup> Alexander Brown, *The First Republic in America*, p. 268.

<sup>18</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 267, King Charles I to the Governor and Council of Virginia.

<sup>19</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. I, p. 293.

<sup>20</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VI, p. 376.

<sup>21</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 53.

<sup>22</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 394.

<sup>23</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VI, p. 260.

<sup>24</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 382.

<sup>25</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 149.

<sup>26</sup> Governor Yeardley's Instructions of 1626 contain the statement that "tobacco falleth every day more and more to a baser price."

<sup>27</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 376.

<sup>28</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 159.

<sup>29</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IX, p. 177.

<sup>30</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. X, p. 425.

<sup>31</sup> G. L. Beer, *Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 159.

<sup>32</sup> Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, p. 4.

<sup>33</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 150.

<sup>34</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 288. In Feb. 1627, orders were issued once more that all colonial tobacco, whether of Virginia or of the West Indies, should be shipped only to London. *Calendar of State Papers, 1574-1660*, p. 84.

<sup>35</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, pp. 149, 155.

<sup>36</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-12, Petition of Jan. 2, 1655.

<sup>37</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, pp. 349-356.

<sup>38</sup> G. L. Beer, *Origins of the British Colonial System*, pp. 203-204.

<sup>39</sup> G. L. Beer, *Origins of the British Colonial System*, p. 216.

<sup>40</sup> The author of *A New Description of Virginia*, published in 1649, states that "in Tobacco they can make £20 sterling a man, at 3d a pound per annum." Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, p. 6.

<sup>41</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 382.

<sup>42</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 149, Vol. II, p. 53, Vol. VII, p. 259.

<sup>43</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VII, p. 260.

<sup>44</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. VIII, p. 158.

- <sup>45</sup> Abstracts of Proceedings of Virginia Company of London, Vol. I, pp. 41-42.
- <sup>46</sup> J. C. Hotten, Original Lists of Emigrants to America, pp. 201-265.
- <sup>47</sup> Colonial Virginia Register, pp. 54-55.
- <sup>48</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, p. 16.
- <sup>49</sup> Colonial Virginia Register, pp. 68-69.
- <sup>50</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>51</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 420.
- <sup>52</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 421; Vol. IV, p. 75.
- <sup>53</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. I, p. 77.
- <sup>54</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, pp. 15-18.
- <sup>55</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, p. 56.
- <sup>56</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>57</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XI, p. 271.
- <sup>58</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XI, p. 276.
- <sup>59</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XI, pp. 271-276.
- <sup>60</sup> Virginia Colonial Register, pp. 64, 68, 70.
- <sup>61</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. IX, p. 72.
- <sup>62</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Vol. V, p. 224, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.
- <sup>63</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, New Series Vol. I, p. 4.
- <sup>64</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, pp. 83, 84, 125, 126.
- <sup>65</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VII, p. 5.
- <sup>66</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, p. 78.
- <sup>67</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, pp. 77, 191, 281.
- <sup>68</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, p. 122.
- <sup>69</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, p. 192.
- <sup>70</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. VI, p. 76.
- <sup>71</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. IX, p. 144.
- <sup>72</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. IX, p. 144.
- <sup>73</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XI, p. 276.
- <sup>74</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Vol. III, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol. The name is here spelled John Blackborne.
- <sup>75</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Vol. III, Register of Land Office,

Virginia State Capitol. On the lists the name is spelled William Butcher.

<sup>76</sup> J. C. Wise, *The Early History of the Eastern Shore of Virginia*, pp. 135-137.

<sup>77</sup> *Virginia Land Patents*, Vol. IV, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

<sup>78</sup> J. C. Wise, *The Early History of the Eastern Shore of Virginia*, p. 95.

<sup>79</sup> G. C. Greer, *Early Virginia Immigrants*, p. 68.

<sup>80</sup> J. C. Wise, *The Early History of the Eastern Shore of Virginia*, p. 376.

<sup>81</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. V, p. 101.

<sup>82</sup> W. A. Crozier, *Virginia County Records*, Vol. VII, p. 177.

<sup>83</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. VI, p. 92.

<sup>84</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. VI, p. 298.

<sup>85</sup> In 1656 John Hammond declared that though it cost six pounds sterling to go to Virginia, those who decided to make the venture could be sure that their money was well spent. He advised "any that goes over free, but in a mean condition, to hire himself for reasonable wages of Tobacco and Provision, the first year," for by that means he could live free of disbursement, and "have something to help him the next year." Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 14.

<sup>86</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. VIII, p. 441.

<sup>87</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. IX, p. 27.

<sup>88</sup> *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, Vol. X, p. 271.

#### NOTES TO CHAPTER V

<sup>1</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. II, p. 109.

<sup>2</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 26, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>3</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, p. 401.

<sup>4</sup> R. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 160.

<sup>5</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Perry and Hyde to the Lords of Trade, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>6</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, *The Present State of the Tobacco Plantations in America*, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>7</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Correspondence of the Board of Trade; *Statutes of the Realm*, Vol. IX, p. 917.

<sup>8</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. I, pp. 141-155.

<sup>9</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-16, Petition of Berkeley and Others, Aug. 26, 1662.

<sup>10</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-20, Thomas Ludwell to Secretary Arlington, May 1, 1666.

<sup>11</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-20, Sir William Berkeley and others to Secretary Arlington, July 13, 1666.

<sup>12</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-20, Sir William Berkeley and others to Secretary Arlington, July 13, 1666.

<sup>13</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-21, Thomas Ludwell to Lord Arlington, Feb. 12, 1667.

<sup>14</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-21, Thomas Ludwell to Lord John Berkeley.

<sup>15</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-23, p. 19, Ludwell to Lord Arlington.

<sup>16</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-21, Governor and Council to the King.

<sup>17</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-30, p. 51, Petition of the Governor and Council.

<sup>18</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1356, p. 408, Report of the Council to the King.

<sup>19</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1355, p. 385, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>20</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-23, p. 19, Ludwell to Lord Arlington, July 20, 1665.

<sup>21</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 246, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>22</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, pp. 232-240, Dialogue Between John Good and Nathaniel Bacon, Colonial Entry Book, 1677.

<sup>23</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-30, p. 51, Petition of the Governor and Council to the King, July 1673.

<sup>24</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1355, p. 410, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>25</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1356, p. 179, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>26</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. II, p. 147.

<sup>27</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 276, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>28</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 276, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>29</sup> This view of the matter has the support of the dean of Virginia historians, Dr. Philip Alexander Bruce. Dr. Bruce writes: "No less an authority than Robert Beverley, the historian, states that the Navigation Acts had a sensible influence in precipitating Bacon's Rebellion. In the early life of this writer he must have been closely associated with hundreds of people who had been through the uprising, and knew much, by direct observation, of the currents that governed it. The elder Beverley was thoroughly informed and thus, in his own home, the son had the best of opportunities of learning the truth. Beverley himself declared that the Acts were causing discontent among the people, long before the Rebellion actually occurred, and so did John Bland in his memorable petition. There is no doubt that the Acts, by keeping alive a sense of friction, left the people in just the state of mind to seize with eagerness on the more palpable wrongs which were specifically brought forward as the justification for resistance. It was really the groundwork of the movement, though if it had been the only cause, might not have precipitated open resistance to the Government.

<sup>30</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. II, p. 115.

<sup>31</sup> Secretary Thomas Ludwell in a long report to the British Government spoke of the Virginia Government as Berkeley's own, "Which I so term," he explains, "because he is the sole author of the most substantial parts of it, either for Lawes or other inferior institutions." British Public Record Office, CO1-20.

<sup>32</sup> British Museum, Egerton Manuscript, 2395, f. 356b.

<sup>33</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-19, Berkeley to Lord Arlington, Aug. 1, 1665.

<sup>34</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. I, pp. 399-400.

<sup>35</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to the Board of Trade.

<sup>36</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-30-78, Memorial of John Knight, Oct. 29, 1673.

<sup>37</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-30-71, Council of Virginia to the King, 1673.

<sup>38</sup> Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, pp. 1-16.

<sup>39</sup> British Museum, Egerton Manuscript, 2395, f. 356b, *A Discourse and View of Virginia*.

<sup>40</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to the Board of Trade.

<sup>41</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-34-95, Petition of Francis Moryson, Thomas Ludwell and Robert Smith.

<sup>42</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

<sup>43</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 20, 21, 22, Colonial Entry Book.

#### NOTES TO CHAPTER VI

<sup>1</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-30, pp. 17, 51.

<sup>3</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1671-1624, Virginia State Library.

<sup>4</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1684-1686, pp. 34-35, Virginia State Library.

<sup>5</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1684-1686, pp. 86-87, Virginia State Library.

<sup>6</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 199.

<sup>7</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 3.

<sup>8</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 200.

<sup>9</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 3.

<sup>10</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 18.

<sup>11</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 15.

<sup>12</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 201.

<sup>13</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 13.

<sup>14</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Statement of Mr. Perry and Captain Hyde, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>15</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Virginia Richly Valued, p. 10.

<sup>16</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Albion, p. 32.

<sup>17</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. III, Leah and Rachel, p. 18.

<sup>18</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 7.

<sup>19</sup> Abstracts of Proceedings of the Virginia Company of London, Vol. II, p. 171.

- <sup>20</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 153.
- <sup>21</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, pp. 160-161.
- <sup>22</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. V, p. 285.
- <sup>23</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1684-1686, p. 7, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>24</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1684-1686, pp. 34-35, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>25</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1684-1686, pp. 86-87, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>26</sup> Surry County Wills, Deeds, Etc. 1671-1684, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>27</sup> John Splitimber paid for himself alone in the tithable lists of 1675.
- <sup>28</sup> York County Records, 1694-1702, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>29</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 15.
- <sup>30</sup> Peter Force, Tracts and Other Papers, Vol. II, New Description of Virginia, p. 14.
- <sup>31</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 241.
- <sup>32</sup> "I would have all men consider how meanly we are provided of men of learning, ability and courage, nay indeed of honesty, to stand up in the people's behalf and oppose the oppressing party," said Nathaniel Bacon in 1676. British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 246.
- <sup>33</sup> The most notable case of betrayal is that of Isaac Allerton, who sold himself to the Governor for the promise of a seat in the Council of State. British Public Record Office, CO5-1356, pp. 125-126, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>34</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-4.
- <sup>35</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. I, pp. 287-288.
- <sup>36</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. X, p. 271.
- <sup>37</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-8, p. 48.
- <sup>38</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-8.
- <sup>39</sup> Hening, Statutes at Large, Vol. I, pp. 360-361.
- <sup>40</sup> Hening, Statutes at Large, Vol. I, p. 361.
- <sup>41</sup> Hening, Statutes at Large, Vol. I, p. 355.
- <sup>42</sup> Hening, Statutes at Large, Vol. I, p. 363.
- <sup>43</sup> Sixth Report of Royal Commission on Historical Manuscripts, Part I, Instructions to Sir George Ayscue, Sept. 26, 1651.
- <sup>44</sup> The commissioners were Capt. Robert Dennis, Richard Ben-

nett, Thomas Stegge and Captain William Claiborne, all of whom with the exception of Dennis were Virginians.

<sup>45</sup> Hening, *Statutes at Large*, Vol. I, pp. 371, 373.

<sup>46</sup> Southern Literary Messenger, Jan. 1845; Charles Campbell, *History of Virginia*, p. 74.

<sup>47</sup> Southern Literary Messenger, Jan. 1845.

<sup>48</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1371, p. 387, Colonial Entry Book.

## NOTES TO CHAPTER VII

<sup>1</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1356, p. 104, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>2</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 40.

<sup>3</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1305, Document 23, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>4</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1345, Document 16, Correspondence of the Secretary of State.

<sup>5</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 42.

<sup>6</sup> Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1702.

<sup>7</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1355, pp. 381-385, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>8</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 168.

<sup>9</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 16, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>10</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 91.

<sup>11</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1345, Document 16, John Linton to the Board of Trade, Correspondence of the Secretary of State.

<sup>12</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Report of John Linton on the Tobacco Trade, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>13</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1345, Document 16, Correspondence of the Secretary of State.

<sup>14</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 26, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>15</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 26, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>16</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>17</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1340, Document 91, Col. Quary's Memorial.

- <sup>18</sup> R. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 42.
- <sup>19</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Correspondence of the Board of Trade; CO5-1360, p. 233, Governor Nicholson to the Lords of Trade.
- <sup>20</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 91, Col. Quary's Memorial.
- <sup>21</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Correspondence of the Board of Trade, Letter of Col. Quary Sept. I, 1706.
- <sup>22</sup> Princeton Transcripts, Virginia Land Patents, Princeton University Library.
- <sup>23</sup> Britain Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 107-108, Colonial Entry Book. In 1699 Gov. Nicholson stated that Orinoco was bringing 20 shillings the hundredweight and Sweetscented 25 shillings and up, which he considered an unusually good return. British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, p. 322.
- <sup>24</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 66.
- <sup>25</sup> J. C. Hotten, *Original Lists of Emigrants to America*, pp. 202-265.
- <sup>26</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 89.
- <sup>27</sup> Peter Force, *Tracts and Other Papers*, Vol. II, *New Description of Virginia*, p. 3.
- <sup>28</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to the Board of Trade.
- <sup>29</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1355, p. 345, Lord Culpeper's account of his compliance with the King's instructions, Dec. 1681.
- <sup>30</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 75.
- <sup>31</sup> P. A. Bruce, *Economic History of Virginia*, Vol. II, p. 75.
- <sup>32</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-26-77, Berkeley to the Board of Trade.
- <sup>33</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 323.
- <sup>34</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, pp. 324-325.
- <sup>35</sup> York County Records, 1664-1672, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>36</sup> York County Records, 1694-1702, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>37</sup> Henrico Records, 1677-1692, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>38</sup> York County Records, 1694-1697, Virginia State Library.
- <sup>39</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1317, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>40</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1317, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>41</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1406, Minutes of the

Council March 21, 1710, CO5-1363, pp. 189-191, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>42</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1322, Governor Gooch to the Lords of Trade, Sept. 14, 1730; Feb. 12, 1731.

<sup>43</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1363, pp. 317-324, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>44</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1362, pp. 369-373, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>45</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 83.

<sup>46</sup> Princeton Transcripts, Virginia Land Patents, Princeton University Library.

<sup>47</sup> P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, p. 108.

<sup>48</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>49</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1314, Document 66, Governor Nott to the Board of Trade.

<sup>50</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1362, pp. 365-367, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>51</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1362, pp. 365-367, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>52</sup> During these years the planters were too impoverished to purchase slaves. The decline in the tobacco trade produced a feeling among the people that the colony had been overstocked with blacks.

<sup>53</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1322, Correspondence of the Board of Trade, Report of Governor Gooch.

<sup>54</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1322, Francis Fane to the Lords of Trade, Dec. 10, 1728.

<sup>55</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1356, p. 139, Colonial Entry Book.

#### NOTES TO CHAPTER VIII

<sup>1</sup> Princeton Transcripts, Virginia Land Patents, Princeton University Library.

<sup>2</sup> Princeton Transcripts, Virginia Land Patents, Princeton University Library.

<sup>3</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1362, pp. 365-367, Colonial Entry Book.

<sup>4</sup> Virginia Land Patents, Register of Land Office, Virginia State Capitol.

<sup>5</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, p. 28.

- <sup>6</sup> G. L. Beer, *The Old Colonial System*, Vol. I, pp. 320-321.
- <sup>7</sup> Jared Sparks, *The Works of Benjamin Franklin*, Vol. X, iii.
- <sup>8</sup> Maurice Vanlaer, *La Fin d'un Peuple*, pp. 38-39.
- <sup>9</sup> Maurice Vanlaer, *La Fin d'un Peuple*, pp. 112-117.
- <sup>10</sup> British Public Record Office, CO1-39-38.
- <sup>11</sup> Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1696-1697, p. 420.
- <sup>12</sup> Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1696-1697, p. 500.
- <sup>13</sup> Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1696-1697, p. 546.
- <sup>14</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 20, 21, 22.
- <sup>15</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 20, 21, 22.
- <sup>16</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, p. 23, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>17</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, p. 113, Andros to the Lords of Trade, July 1, 1697.
- <sup>18</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1359, pp. 266-303, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>19</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1312, p. 409A, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>20</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1360, p. 441, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>21</sup> Rent Roll of 1704, p. 46.
- <sup>22</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1321, Correspondence of the Board of Trade, Gooch to the Lords of Trade, Nov. 6, 1728.
- <sup>23</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1362, pp. 374-382, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>24</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1364, p. 27, Colonial Entry Book.
- <sup>25</sup> J. S. Bassett, *Writings of William Byrd*, p. 31.
- <sup>26</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1322, Gooch to the Lords of Trade, Feb. 27, 1731.
- <sup>27</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1321, Gooch to the Lords of Trade, Aug. 9, 1728.
- <sup>28</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 16, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>29</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 91, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>30</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.
- <sup>31</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 16.
- <sup>32</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Document 91, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>33</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1315, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>34</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Account of the tobacco trade by Perry and Hyde, June 2, 1714.

<sup>35</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1316, Petition of the Council, Correspondence of the Board of Trade.

<sup>36</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1318, Address of King and Queen county inhabitants to Spotswood; address of Westmoreland inhabitants; letter of Spotswood to Lords of Trade, Dec. 22, 1718.

<sup>37</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXI, pp. 106-122.

<sup>38</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. XII, pp. 414-416.

<sup>39</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IV, pp. 297-299.

<sup>40</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXVI, pp. 97-106, 196-201, 250-258.

<sup>41</sup> Chastellux, Travels in North America, p. 291.

<sup>42</sup> Philip Fithian, Journal and Letters, p. 243.

<sup>43</sup> Smyth, A Tour of the United States, Vol. I, p. 58.

<sup>44</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXI, pp. 106-122.

<sup>45</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXVI, pp. 97-106, 196-201, 250-258.

<sup>46</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IV, pp. 297-299.

<sup>47</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. XII, p. 415.

<sup>48</sup> Lower Norfolk County Antiquary, Vol. IV, p. 144.

<sup>49</sup> W. A. Crozier, Virginia County Records, Vol. I, pp. 88-110.

<sup>50</sup> Thomas Jefferson, Notes on Virginia, Edition of 1801, p. 321.

<sup>51</sup> Chastellux, Travels in North America, p. 292 note.

<sup>52</sup> Smyth, A Tour of the United States, Vol. I, p. 66.

<sup>53</sup> Hugh Jones, History of Virginia, p. 36.

<sup>54</sup> Rowland, Life of George Mason, Vol. I, pp. 101, 102; Philip Fithian, Journal and Letters, pp. 67, 104, 130, 130, 138, 217, 259; P. A. Bruce, Economic History of Virginia, Vol. II, pp. 411, 418.

<sup>55</sup> British Public Record Office, CO5-1314, Document 63IV.

<sup>56</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. XII, p. 415.

<sup>57</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IV, pp. 292-299.

<sup>58</sup> William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XXVI, pp. 97-106, 196-201, 250-258.

<sup>59</sup> Smyth, A Tour of the United States, p. 67.

<sup>60</sup> Anbury, Travels Through America, Vol. II, p. 330.

<sup>61</sup> Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. XII, p. 415.

## *APPENDIX*



# RENT ROLL OF VIRGINIA

1704-1705

A True and Perfect Rent Roll of all the Lands held of her Maj<sup>t</sup> in  
Henrico County, April 1705

**A**

Andrews Thomas .....	396
Ascouth Mary .....	633
Archer Jno .....	335
Adkins Jno .....	125
Archer Geo .....	1738
Aldy John .....	162
Akins James Sen <sup>r</sup> .....	200
Asbrook Peter Sen <sup>r</sup> .....	200
Akins James Jun <sup>r</sup> .....	218
Allin Widd <sup>o</sup> .....	99
	4106

Burton Rob <sup>t</sup> .....	1350
Burgony John .....	100
Branch James .....	555
Burrows Wm. Wm. Black- well New Kent .....	63
Branch Thomas .....	540
Bailey Thomas .....	251
Branch Matthew .....	947
Burton Wm .....	294
Bullington Rob <sup>t</sup> .....	100
Broadnax Jno Jr .....	725
Beverley Rob <sup>t</sup> .....	988
	33590

**B**

Byrd Esq <sup>r</sup> .....	19500
Bolling Rob <sup>t</sup> .....	500
Bolling John .....	831
Bevill John .....	495
Branch X <sup>to</sup> .....	646
Blackman Wm .....	175
Bridgwater Sam .....	280
Bowman John Jun <sup>r</sup> .....	300
Bowman Edw <sup>d</sup> .....	300
Branch Benj .....	550
Brown Martha .....	893
Bullington Benj .....	100
Bowman Lew .....	65
Bullington .....	144
Bevell Essex .....	200
Baugh John .....	448
Baugh James .....	458
Burton Isaac .....	100
Bottom John .....	100
Bayley Abr .....	542
Brooks Jane belonging to Wm Walker New Kent..	550
Braseal Henry .....	200
Brazeal Henry Jun <sup>r</sup> .....	300

**C**

Cheatham Tho .....	300
Cox Batt .....	100
Cox John .....	150
Cox George .....	200
Chamberlaine Maj. Tho ..	1000
Childers Abr. Sen <sup>r</sup> .....	368
Cannon John .....	108
Cox Wm .....	300
Childers Ab <sup>r</sup> Jun <sup>r</sup> .....	100
Clark Wm .....	333
Clark John .....	300
Cox Rich <sup>d</sup> .....	300
Cardwell Tho .....	350
Crozdall Roger .....	200
Cock Wm .....	1535
Cock Rich <sup>d</sup> Sen <sup>r</sup> .....	2180
Childers Philip Sen <sup>r</sup> .....	50
Childers Philip .....	300
Childers Tho .....	300
Carter Theod .....	75
Cock Capt Thomas .....	2976 $\frac{1}{2}$
Couzins Charles .....	362
Clerk Alonso .....	604

## APPENDIX

Cock James .....	1506	Garthwaite Sam <sup>1</sup> .....	50
Curd Edw <sup>a</sup> .....	600	Garthwaite Ephriam .....	163
Cock Rich <sup>a</sup> .....	476	Granger John .....	472
Cock Jno .....	98	Gill John .....	235
	<u>15171½</u>	Good Sam <sup>1</sup> .....	588
		Gower James Grigs Land..	500
			<u>5571</u>
		H	
D		Hill James .....	795
Dixon Nicholas .....	150	Holmes Rich .....	100
Dodson Wm .....	100	Harris Thomas .....	357
Douglas Charles .....	63	Harris Tim <sup>o</sup> .....	250
	<u>313</u>	Hill Rosam <sup>a</sup> .....	1633
		Hobby Lawrence .....	500
E		Hatcher John .....	215
Edw <sup>a</sup> Tho .....	676	Haskins Edward .....	225
Entroughty Derby .....	200	Hatcher Edward Sen .....	150
Ealam Rob <sup>t</sup> .....	400	Hunt Geo .....	200
Ellis John .....	217	Hughs Edward .....	100
East Tho Sen .....	475	Hancock Samuel .....	100
East Tho .....	554	Holmes Thomas .....	50
East Edw <sup>a</sup> .....	150	Hambleton James .....	100
Epes Capt Fra <sup>t</sup> .....	2145	Hutchins Nich <sup>o</sup> .....	240
Evans Charles .....	225	Hatcher Benj Sen .....	250
Ealam Martin .....	130	Hatcher Wm Jun .....	50
Epes Isham, Epes Fra. Jun <sup>t</sup> each 444½ acres .....	889	Hobson Wm .....	150
	<u>6061</u>	Hatcher Wm Sen .....	298
		Hatcher Henry .....	650
F		Hancock Robert .....	860
Field Peter Major .....	2185	Harris Mary .....	94
Farrar Capt W'm .....	700	Hall Edward .....	184
Farrar Tho .....	1444	Herbert Mrs .....	1360
Farrar Jno .....	600	Hudson Robert .....	281
Fowler Godfrey .....	250		
Ferguson Robert .....	230		
Ferris Wm .....	50		
Franklin James Sen .....	250		
Franklin James Jun .....	786		
Ferris Rich <sup>a</sup> Sen .....	550		
Farmer Henry .....	100	J	
Forrest James .....	138	Jones Hugh .....	934
Forrest John .....	150	Jefferson Thomas .....	492
Fetherstone Henry .....	700	Jones Philip .....	1153
Farloe John Sen .....	100	Jorden Henry .....	100
Farloe John Jun .....	55 <sup>1</sup>	Jamson John .....	225
Faile John .....	240	Jackson Ralph .....	250
	<u>9024</u>		
G		K	
Gilley Grewin Arrian .....	2528	Kennon Elizabeth .....	1900
Gee Henry .....	435	Knibb Samuel .....	209
Good John Sen .....	600	Knibb Solomon .....	833
		Kendall Richard .....	400
			<u>3342</u>

## APPENDIX

185

## L

Liptroil Edward .....	150
Lewis Wm .....	350
Lester Darens .....	100
Ladd Wm .....	70
Ligon Elizabeth Widdow {	
Ligon Mary Widdow } 1341	
Laforce Reu .....	100
Lochett James .....	50
Lownd Henry .....	516
Lockitt Benj .....	104
Ligon Richard .....	1028
Ligon Hugh .....	150
	3959

## M

Mann Robert .....	100
Matthews Edward .....	330
Moseby Edward .....	150
Moseby Arthur .....	450
	—
	1030

## N

Nunnally Richard .....	70
	—

## O

Osbourne Thomas .....	288
Owen Thomas .....	68
	—
	356

## P

Perkinson John .....	622
Perrin Ann .....	500
Pleasants John .....	9669
Parker Wm .....	100
Parker Nich Sen .....	500
Pledge Jno .....	100
Powell Robert .....	150
Peice John .....	130
Pleasants Jos .....	1709
Porter Wm .....	305
Peirce Wm .....	175
Peirce Francis .....	312
Paine Thomas .....	300
Portlock Elizabeth .....	1000
Pero Henry .....	350
Pattram Ira .....	778
Pride Wm Sen .....	1280
Pollard Thomas Sen .....	130

Perkinson Seth .....	50
Pinkitt Wm .....	192
Pinkitt Thomas .....	300
Pattison Joseph .....	500
Porter John .....	100
Pollard Thomas Jun .....	235
Pollard Henry .....	235
Pinkitt John .....	215

19937

## R

Robertson Geo .....	1445
Ragsdale Godfrey .....	450
Rawlett Peter .....	164
Russell Charles .....	200
Rowlett Wm .....	200
Rowen Francis .....	148
Robertson John .....	415
Rouch Rachell .....	300
Robertson Thomas .....	200
Russell John .....	93
Royall Joseph .....	783
Redford John .....	775
Randolph Col Wm includ- ing 1185 acres swamp ...	9465

14648

## S

Steward Jno Jun .....	902
Scott Walter .....	550
Soane Capt Wm .....	3841
Stanley Edward .....	300
Snuggs Charles .....	400
Sewell Wm .....	59
Smith Humphrey .....	40
Sharp Robert .....	500
Stovall Barth° .....	100
Skerin Widdow .....	75
Steward Daniell .....	270
Smith Obadiah .....	200
Stowers Widdow .....	200
Sarrazin Stephen .....	120

7557

## T

Tancock Orphans .....	1230
Trent Henry .....	224
Turpin Thomas .....	491
Turpin Philip .....	444
Turpin Thomas .....	100

## APPENDIX

Turner Henry .....	200	S .....	7557
Taylor Thomas .....	475	R .....	14648
Tanner Edward .....	217	P .....	19937
Traylor Edward .....	100	O .....	396
Totty Thomas .....	260	N .....	70
Taylor Wm .....	730	M .....	1030
		L .....	3959
	4471	K .....	3342
		J .....	3154
V		H .....	9242
Veden Henry .....	100	G .....	5571
		F .....	9024
W		E .....	6061
Woodson John .....	4060	D .....	313
Williams Robert .....	300	C .....	1517½
Woodson Robert Jun .....	1157	B .....	33590
Ward Richard .....	300	A .....	4106
Watson John Sen .....	1603		
Walhall Wm .....	500		165814
Walhall Henry .....	832		Out of which must be deducted
Whitby Wm .....	215		these several quantities of land
Watkins Henry Sen .....	100		following Viz:
Webb John .....	100		Tancocks Orphans Land .. 1230
Watkins Thomas .....	200		Allens Orphans Land ..... 99
Woodson Rich .....	180		
Woodson Widdow .....	650		1329
Williamson Thomas .....	1077		An account of Land that hath been
Webb Giles .....	7260		concealed
Wood Thomas .....	50	John Steward Jun .....	2
Watkins Wm .....	120	Thomas Jefferson .....	15
Watkins Jos .....	120	Thomas Turpin .....	10
Watkins Edward .....	120	Henry Gee .....	10
Ward Seth .....	700	Stephen Sarrzen .....	10
Wood Moses .....	100	Mr. Lownd .....	1
Wilkinson Jos .....	75½	James Atkin Sen .....	32
Wilkinson John .....	130	Matthew Branch .....	10
Worsham John .....	1104	James Franklin .....	360
Womack Abr .....	560	James Hill .....	50
Willson Jno Sen .....	1686	Rosemond Hill .....	33
Willson Jno Jun .....	100	John Bullington .....	44
Walhall Richard .....	500	Benjamin Lockett .....	4
Wortham Geo .....	400	John Russell .....	23
Wortham Charles .....	90	Charles Douglas .....	13
Womack Wm .....	100	Col Randolph .....	
		Carless Land .....	1049
	24489½		
W .....	24489½		1669
V .....	100		The Quit Rent being 162719 acres.
T .....	4471		

A Rent Roll of all the Lands held in the County of Prince George for  
the Year 1704

## A

Thomas Anderson .....	450	Bartho Crowder .....	75
Wm Aldridge .....	160	Thomas Clay .....	70
Mr. Charles Anderson .....	505	Jno Coleman .....	200
Richard Adkinson .....	200	George Crook .....	489
Thomas Adams .....	250	Francis Coleman .....	150
Matthem Anderson .....	349	Jno Clay .....	350
Henry Ally .....	390	Wm Coleman Jun .....	100
Wm Anderson .....	235	George Crochet .....	30
Jno Anderson .....	228	James Cocke .....	750
Henry Anderson .....	250	Robert Carlill .....	100
Robert Abernathy .....	100	Jno Clerk .....	83
Jno Avery .....	100	Richarl Claunton .....	100
	3217	Stephen Cock for Jones Orphans .....	2405
			7622

## B

Richard Bland .....	1000	D	
Robert Birchett .....	375	Thomas Daniell .....	150
Arthur Biggins .....	200	Roger Drayton .....	270
James Benford .....	461	Joseph Daniell .....	50
Jno Barloe .....	50	Jno Doby .....	500
Charles Bartholomew .....	600	George Dowing .....	100
Philip Burlowe .....	350	Wm Davis .....	100
Nicholas Brewer .....	100	Jno Duglas .....	300
Jno Bishop Sen .....	100	Richard Darding .....	500
Jno Bishop Jun .....	100	Christopher Davis .....	50
Isaac Baites .....	360	Thomas Dunkin .....	136
Thomas Busby Capt .....	300		
Thomas Busby .....	200		2156
Wm Batt .....	750		
Coll Byrd Esq .....	100	E	
Edward Birchett .....	886	Robert Ellis .....	50
Coll Bolling .....	3402	Jno Epes Sen .....	530
Edmund Browder .....	100	Wm Epes Sen .....	750
Matus Brittler .....	510	Jno Epes .....	300
Jno Butler .....	1385	Wm Epes .....	633½
Andrew Beck .....	300	Edward Epes .....	500
Henry Batt .....	790	Littlebury Epes .....	833½
Wm Butler .....	283	Benj Evans .....	700
Thomas Blitchodin .....	284	Thomas Edwards .....	250
	12986	Dan Epes .....	200
		Jno Evans .....	800

## C

Thomas Curiton .....	150	Jno. Ellis Jun .....	400
Henry Chammins .....	300	John Ellis Sen .....	400
Capt Clements .....	1920	Mary Evans .....	400
Wm. Claunton .....	100	Peter Evans .....	270
Robert Catte .....	100	Capt Francis Epes .....	226
			7243

## APPENDIX

F			
Jno Freeman .....	300	Isaac Hall .....	450
Wm Frost .....	50	Jno Howell .....	183
Jno Fountaine .....	350	Thomas Howell .....	25
Robert Fellows .....	418	Mrs. Herbert .....	3925
Elizabeth Flood .....	100	Jno Hixs .....	216
Benj Foster .....	923	Richard Hamlin .....	240
Jno Field .....	100	Thomas Harnison .....	1077
	2241	Elizabeth Hamlin .....	250
G		Wm Hulme .....	100
Jno Green .....	125	Jeffrey Hawkes .....	125
Richard Gord .....	100	Adam Heath .....	300
David Goodgamt .....	479	Jno Hill .....	160
James Greithian .....	363	Jno Hardiman .....	872
Major Goodrich .....	900	Justance Hall .....	614
Thomas Goodwin .....	150		17366
Huibert Gibson .....	250	J	
Richard Griffith .....	335	Wm Jones Jun .....	230
James Griffin .....	100	Wm Jones Sen .....	600
Charles Gee .....	484	Henry Jones .....	200
Charles Gillam .....	200	Robert Jones .....	241
Hugh Goelightly .....	500	Edmund Irby .....	800
Lewis Green .....	149	Nich. Jarrett .....	700
Wm Grigg .....	200	James Jackson .....	80
John Gillam .....	1000	Adam Ivie .....	200
John Goelightly .....	100	Thomas Jackson .....	60
	5435	James Jones Sen .....	1100
H		Henry Ivye .....	450
Coll Hill .....	1000	Peter Jones .....	621
Daniell Hickdon .....	280	Ricard Jones .....	600
Robert Harthorn .....	243	Ralph Jacskon .....	110
Jno Hamlin .....	1484½	Joshua Irby .....	200
Coll Harrison Esq .....	150	John Jones .....	350
Ralph Hill .....	175		6542
Wm Harrison .....	1930	K	
Wm Heath .....	320	Richard Kirkland .....	300
Edward Holloway .....	100	John King .....	50
Robert Hobbs .....	100	Henry King .....	650
Jno Hobbs Sen .....	250	Arthur Kavanah .....	60
Edward Holloway Sen .....	620	Ensobius King .....	100
Jno Hobbs .....	100		1160
James Harrison .....	200	L	
Gilbert Haye .....	200	John Livesley .....	300
Richard Hudson .....	75	Samuel Lewey .....	100
Gabriell Harrison .....	150	Jno Lumbady .....	400
Robert Hix .....	1000	Jno Leeneir .....	100
Joseph Holycross .....	84	Mrs Low .....	70
Charles Howell .....	125	• Sam Lewey for Netherland Orphans .....	498
Sam Harwell .....	125		

## APPENDIX

189

Thomas Lewis Sen .....	200
Hugh Liegh .....	762
Francis Leadbeatter .....	100
Jno Leadbeatter .....	400
Wm Low .....	1584
	3114

## M

Wm Madox .....	190
Robert Munford .....	339
James Mingo Sen .....	500
Matt Marks .....	1500
Samuell Moody .....	328
Francis Mallory .....	100
Daniell Mallone .....	100
Jno Mayes .....	365
Richard More .....	472
Henry Mitchell Sen .....	100
Jno Mitchell .....	170
Wm Mayes .....	763
Edward Murrell .....	100
Thomas Mitchell Jun .....	100
Peter Mitchell .....	305
Henry Mitchell Jun .....	200
Francis Maberry .....	347
James Matthews .....	100
Jno Martin .....	200
	6839

## N

Richard Newman .....	120
Walter Nannaley .....	299
	419

## O

Nicholas Overburry .....	809
Jno Owen .....	25
	834

## P

George Pasmore .....	330
Francis Poythwes Sen .....	1283
Joseph Pattison .....	200
George Pail .....	246
Nathaniel Phillips .....	150
Jno Price .....	50
Wm Peoples .....	150
Elizabeth Peoples .....	235
Joseph Perry .....	275

Richard Pigeon .....	524
Thomas Potts .....	200
Joseph Pritchett .....	50
Jno Petterson .....	373
George Pace .....	1000
Ephram Parkam .....	300
Thomas Poythres .....	616
Dand Peoples .....	60
Grace Perry .....	100
Jno Poythres Jun .....	916
Jno Petterson .....	420
Mr Micajah Perry .....	600

## R

Jno Roberts .....	316
Nath. Robinson .....	100
Roger Reace Jun .....	100
Henry Read .....	75
Roger Reace Sen .....	100
Wm Reanes .....	250
Frances Raye .....	300
Jno Reeks .....	50
Wm Rachell .....	100
Timothy Reading Sen .....	460
Jno Riners .....	200
Edward Richardson .....	300
Coll Randolph .....	226

2677

## S

Matthew Smart .....	100
Wm Standback .....	150
Thomas Symmons .....	566
James Salmen .....	477
Wm Savage .....	150
Wm Sandborne .....	40
Jno Scott .....	300
Martin Shieffield .....	150
James Smith .....	67
John Stroud .....	60
Richard Seeking .....	100
Wm Sexton .....	50
James Leveaker .....	710
Chichester Sturdivant .....	214
Daniell Sturdivant .....	850
Richard Smith .....	550
Jno Spaine .....	118
Matthew Sturdivant .....	150
Capt Stith .....	470½

827½

## APPENDIX

T			
Major Henry Tooker for the Merchants in London .....	4600	Jno Wickett .....	250
George Tilliman .....	446	Capt. James Wynn .....	860
Jno Tilliman .....	530	Jno Woodlife Jun .....	750
Wm Tomlinson .....	400	Jno Winningham Jun .....	200
Adam Tapley .....	977	Richard Wallpoole .....	625
Capt Jno Taylor .....	1700	Jno Womack .....	550
Mich. Taburd .....	150	Capt Thomas Wynn .....	400
Maj' Tooker .....	181	Jno Wall .....	233
Robert Tooker .....	400	Thomas Winningham .....	100
Robert Tester .....	170	Elizabeth Woodlife .....	844
Joseph Tooker .....	200	Richard Worthern .....	1600
Wm Tempel .....	100	Richard Winkles .....	450
Jno Thornhill .....	350	Capt Nicholas Wyatt .....	700
Jno Taylor .....	100	Antho Wyatt .....	250
Nath. Tatham Jun .....	200	Valentine Williamson .....	250
Samuel Tatham Sen .....	100	Hurldy Wick .....	600
Samuel Tatham Jun .....	195	Wm Wilkins .....	900
Henry Talley .....	639	Francis Wilkins .....	150
Richard Turberfield .....	140	Robert Winkfield .....	107
Francis Tucker .....	100	Jarvis Winkfield .....	100
Nath. Tatham Sen .....	501	Henry Wall .....	275
Jno Thrower .....	250	Jno Wilkins .....	150
Thomas Thrower .....	150	James Williams .....	1436
James Taylor .....	306	George Williams .....	216
Sanders Tapley .....	300	Jno White .....	150
Thomas Tapley .....	300	Edward Winningham .....	100
James Thwheat Sen .....	715	Samuel Woodward .....	600
James Thwheat Jun .....	100		
Elizabeth Tucker .....	212		
Thomas Taylor .....	400		
Edward Thrower .....	150		
	<u>14462</u>		<u>13684</u>
			583

## V

Jno Vaughan .....	169
Samuel Vaughan .....	169
Nath. Vrooin .....	150
Daniell Vaughan .....	169
James Vaughan .....	169
Richard Vaughan .....	309
Wm Vaughan .....	309
Thomas Vinson .....	550
Nicholas Vaughan .....	169
	<u>2163</u>

## W

John Woodlife Sen .....	644
Wm Wallis .....	200

A .....	3217
B .....	12086
C .....	7622
D .....	2156
E .....	7243
F .....	2241
G .....	5435
H .....	17306½
J .....	6542
K .....	1160
L .....	5114
M .....	6839
N .....	419
O .....	834
P .....	9203
R .....	2677
S .....	8272

## APPENDIX

191

T .....	14462
V .....	2163
W .....	13684
Y .....	583
	127218½

Deduct the new discovered Land .....	10000
	117218½

Accounted for .....	117218½
	4245

Orphans Land which is refuld  
paying Quit Rents for viz:

Mr. John Bannister Orphans per Stephen Cock .....	1970
Capt Henry Batesorph and their Mother Mrs Mary Bates .....	1200

Capt Henry Randolph Or- phans per Capt Giles Webb .....	129
Morris Halliham Orphans ped Robert Rivers .....	200
Crockson Land formerly & who it belongs to now I cannot find .....	750
	4245
117218½ acres at 24 lb tob° per 100 is ..... 28132 lb tobacco at 5s per lb is ..... 70 6 6 Sallary 10 per cent.... 7 0 10½	
	63 5 7½
	per William Epes Sheriff

Rent Roll of all the Lands held of her Maj<sup>tie</sup> In Surry County  
Anno Domini 1704

A	
Allin Arthur Major .....	6780
Andrews Bartho .....	375
Avery Jno .....	150
Atkins Thomas .....	80
Averett Jno .....	120
Atkinson Richard .....	100
Andrews Thomas .....	190
Andrews Robert .....	130
Andrews David .....	225
	8150

Briggs Samuel .....	300
Blico Christopher .....	50
Brigs Charles .....	331
Brigs Henry .....	100
Bentley .....	180
Blackbun Wm .....	150
Blunt Thomas .....	1355
Bookey, Edward .....	180
Browne Wm Coll .....	2510
Browne Wm Capt .....	398
Bineham James .....	157
Bullock Mary .....	100
Barker Jno .....	1160
Bagley Peter .....	100
Barker Jery .....	420
Bunell Hezichiah .....	150
Bougher Phill .....	100
Baile Jno .....	250
Bagley Edward .....	350
	14716

B	
Baker Henry Coll .....	850
Bruton James .....	500
Bennett James .....	200
Bland Sarah .....	1455
Browne Jno .....	600
Benbridge George .....	200
Bighton Richard .....	590
John Bell .....	180
Berham Robert .....	650
Blake Wm .....	200
Browne Edward .....	200
Bincham Jno .....	100
Bennett Richard .....	200
Baker Sarah .....	50
Briggs Sarah .....	300
Baxter Joell .....	100

C	
Chapman Benjamin .....	500
Cockin Wm .....	100
Cocker Jno .....	900
Crafort Robert .....	1000
Crafort Carter .....	100
Chambers Wm .....	50
Clark Jno .....	100

## APPENDIX

Cook Elizabeth .....	200	Ford George .....	100
Carriell Thomas .....	100	Flood Walter .....	820
Clements Jno .....	387	Flood Thomas .....	150
Clarke Jno .....	100	Ford Elias .....	200
Cook Elizabeth .....	200	Flemin Lawrence .....	360
Carriell Thomas .....	100	Foster Christo .....	500
Clements Jno .....	387	Foster Wm .....	100
Clark Robert .....	400	Ferieby Benj .....	170
Checett James .....	50		
Cotten Walter .....	257		2800
Cotten Thomas .....	257		
Collier Jno .....	350	G	
Collier Joseph .....	40	Gray Wm Capt .....	1750
Cock Wm .....	630	Gray Wm Jun .....	1050
Cock Walter .....	875	Grines Austis .....	100
Cooper James .....	100	Gwalney Wm .....	400
Cleaments Francis .....	600	Gray Jno .....	200
Collier Thomas .....	550	Gwalney Wm .....	225
Candenscaine Obedience .....	200	Goodman Wm .....	200
	7746	Gillham Hinche .....	658
		Griffin John .....	200
D		Gully Richard .....	50
Dicks James .....	400	Gray Wm .....	100
Davis Arthur .....	460	Green Edward .....	200
Drew Thomas .....	800	Green Richard .....	260
Drew Edward .....	600		
Delk Roger .....	790	H	
David Arthur .....	50	Harrison Benj Coll .....	2750
Dean Richard .....	100	Harrison Nath. Capt .....	2177
Davis Nath. .....	157	Hunt Wm .....	4042
	3357	Holt Elizabeth .....	1450
E		Holt John .....	150
Edward Wm Mr. ....	2755	Holt Thomas Capt .....	538
Evans Antho .....	100	Holt Wm .....	630
Edward John .....	470	Harris Wm .....	150
Ellitt Wm .....	250	Hart Henry .....	725
Edmund Howell .....	300	Humfort Hugh .....	150
Ellis James .....	180	Hancock John .....	60
Edmund Wm .....	100	Hart Robert .....	600
Ellis Edward .....	30	Humphrey Evan .....	70
Ellis James .....	170	Hollyman Mary .....	290
Ezell Geirge .....	150	Harde Thomas .....	900
Ellis Jere .....	50	Hill Robert .....	200
Evans Abrah. ....	150	Holloman Richard .....	480
	4705	Hargrove Bryan .....	100
F		Humfort Wm .....	50
Flake Robert .....	200	Hill Lyon .....	300
Foster Anne .....	200	Holloman Thomas .....	450
		Heath Adam .....	200
		Harrison Daniell .....	70
		Ham Richard .....	75
		Heart Thomas .....	750

## APPENDIX

193

Hyerd Thomas .....	50	Moss Wm .....	100
Hunt Wm .....	696	Moreing John .....	695
Horne Richard .....	100	Mierick Owen .....	250
Hollingsworth Henry .....	60		—
Howell Wm .....	50		2177
	18413	N	
J			
Jackman Jos John Mr. ....	2980	Newton Wm .....	225
Jones James .....	1000	Newton Robert .....	250
Jarrell Thomas .....	115	Newitt Wm .....	330
Jarrett Charles .....	615	Norwood Richard .....	80
Judkins Samuell .....	100	Nicholl George .....	150
Judkins Wm .....	100	Nichols Robert .....	230
Jurdan George .....	620	Noeway Barefoot .....	150
Jarrett Fardo .....	630	Norwood George .....	330
Johnson Wm .....	360		—
Johnson John .....	350		1745
Jurdan Richard .....	350	P	
	7220	Park Mary .....	100
K		Pittman Thomas Jun .....	100
Kigan Mary .....	200	Phillips, John .....	270
Killingworth Wm .....	60	Price John .....	340
Knott Wm .....	300	Pettoway Elizabeth .....	650
	560	Pulystone Jno .....	1400
L		Parker Richard .....	269
Ludwell Philip Coll .....	1100	Phelps Humphrey .....	100
Lancaster Robert .....	100	Pully Wm .....	300
Lacey Mary .....	100	Procter Joshua .....	660
Lang Mary .....	77	Persons John .....	830
Lane Thomas .....	200	Phillips Wm .....	300
Lane Thomas Jun .....	200	Pettfort Jno .....	200
Laughter Jno .....	300	Pettfort Wm .....	50
Laneere George .....	300		—
Lasley Patrick .....	520		5569
Lucas Wm .....	315	R	
	3212	Randolph Wm Coll .....	1655
M		Ruffice Elizabeth .....	3001
Matthew Edmund .....	50	Reynolds Robert .....	150
Merriell George .....	250	Richardson Joseph .....	300
Moorland Edward .....	225	Reynolds Elizabeth .....	150
Mason Elizabeth .....	300	Reagon Frances .....	200
Mallory Francis .....	147	Roads Wm .....	150
Merrett Matt. ....	60	Rolling George .....	106
Middleton Thomas .....	100	Road Wm .....	450
		Rose Richard .....	100
		Raehell George .....	70
		Rowling Jno .....	476
		Rohings Wm .....	596
		Roger Wm .....	450
			—
			7854

## APPENDIX

S			
Scat Joseph .....	295	Webb Robert .....	340
Sims George .....	200	Watkins John .....	1160
Secoms Nicholas .....	800	Warren Robert .....	150
Savage Charles .....	358	Welch Henry .....	100
Stringfellow Richard .....	75	Warrick John .....	80
Suger Jno .....	250	Wilkinson Matthew .....	200
Sewurds Anne .....	300	Wiggins Thomas .....	300
Sharp Thomas .....	70	Waple Jno .....	300
Sewins Thomas .....	400	Witherington Nicholas .....	100
Steward John .....	200	Will Roger .....	78
Smith Richard .....	200	White Charles .....	136
Savage Mary .....	263		
Smith Thomas .....	750		
Swann Wm .....	1800	Y	
Shrawsbury Joseph .....	260	Young John .....	300
Shrawsbury Francis .....	820	A .....	8150
Savage Henry .....	200	B .....	14716
Short Wm .....	400	C .....	7746
Scarbro Edw .....	150	D .....	3357
Scagin Jno .....	100	E .....	4705
Simmons Jno .....	1300	F .....	2800
Shrawsbury Thomas .....	566	G .....	5393
Stockly Richard .....	100	H .....	18413
Smith Thomas .....	380	J .....	7220
	10237	K .....	560
T		L .....	3212
Thompson Samuell .....	3104	M .....	2177
Tooker Henry Major .....	700	N .....	1745
Taylor Ethelred .....	538	P .....	5569
Thorp Joseph .....	250	R .....	7854
Tyous Thomas .....	400	S .....	10237
Taylor Richard .....	77	T .....	5069
	5069	V .....	187
V		W .....	6679
Vincent Mary .....	187	Y .....	300
W			116089
Wright Thomas .....	100	New Land allowed per order	3841
Williams Charles .....	100		
Wall Joseph .....	150	Aprill 19th 1705	112248
Williams Wm .....	300	Errors excepted per	
Ward Thomas .....	100	Jos Jno. Jackman Sheriff.	
Wall Joseph Jun .....	150	Persons denying payment for Lands	
Warren Allen .....	300	held in this County (viz) Capt	
Warren Thomas .....	1040	Tho Holt as belonging to Mr. Tho	
Watkins Richard .....	1345	Benules Orphans .....	950
Williams Roger .....	150	Mrs. Mary White .....	200
			1150

Lands held by persons living out of  
the Country

Capt Jno Taylor .....	850
Mrs. Sarah Low .....	500
Mr. Jno Hamlin .....	100
Capt Thomas Harrison ....	530
	1150
	—
	3130

Bartho Clement one tract of Land  
he living in England the quantity  
unkowne  
Jno Davis one Tract Living in Isle  
of Wight  
Geo & River Jorden one Tract &  
denys to pay Qt Rents for it &  
no persons living thereon, there is  
one Bray Living in Warwick has  
a small tract Land

A List of her Maj<sup>ts</sup> Q<sup>t</sup> Rents For the Isle Wight County in the  
Year 1704

Jno Atkins .....	200	Matt. Jorden .....	1950
James Atkinson .....	400	Thomas Newman .....	360
Wm Exam .....	1440	George Readich .....	790
Wm Brown .....	150	Francis Lee .....	100
Francis Exam .....	200	Ph. Pardoe .....	100
Richard Bennett .....	70	Jno Parsons .....	155
James Briggs .....	100	George Moore .....	400
Ph. Bratley .....	200	Jno Mangann .....	100
Abr. Drawler .....	200	Robert Mongo .....	400
Jno Branch .....	45	Henry Martin .....	200
Francis Branch .....	50	Jno Murray .....	650
Edward Brantley .....	175	Francis Rayner .....	80
John Brantley .....	364	Jno Richardson .....	150
Edward Boykin .....	1100	James Sampson .....	1200
George Barloe .....	80	Jno Stevenson .....	150
Jno Geoge .....	200	Thomas Sherrer .....	200
Thomas Carter .....	700	Jno Sherrer .....	200
Reubin Cooke .....	250	Wm Thomas .....	250
Jno Clarke .....	850	Thomas Tooke .....	1228
Thomas Cook .....	300	Thomas Throp .....	350
Wm Clark .....	600	Baleaby Terrell .....	100
Edward Champion .....	600	Peter Vasser .....	230
Jno Dowles .....	150	Jno Williams .....	600
Peter Deberry .....	100	George Williamson .....	2735
Thomas Davis .....	100	Fra. Williamson .....	2035
Jno Davis .....	250	Thomas Wood .....	50
Peter Hayes .....	600	James Lupe .....	45
Christo. Hollyman .....	400	Elizabeth Reynolds .....	100
Richard Hardy .....	700	Jno Sojourner .....	240
Thomas Holyman .....	150	Robert Hoge .....	60
Jno Harris .....	365	Andrew Woodley .....	770
Silvester Hill .....	925	Arthur Allen .....	1800
Roger Hodge .....	300	Henry Baker .....	750
Arthur Jones .....	900	Rubin Prochter .....	250
Edward Jones .....	250	Thomas Howell .....	100
Richard Jones .....	250	Nath Whitby .....	170
Jno Johnson .....	890	Jane Atkins .....	600
Roger Ingram .....	300	Jno Mongo .....	100

## APPENDIX

Natt Ridley .....	200	Thomas Jorden .....	207
Jno Bell .....	200	Jno King .....	300
Wm West .....	250	Wm Wilkinson .....	200
Charles Goodrich .....	80	Thomas Grace .....	160
Jno Britt .....	350	Wm West .....	50
Jno Barnes .....	200	Jno Penny .....	300
Henry Goldham .....	1000	Robert Richards .....	100
Jno Waltham .....	450	Thomas Northworthy .....	600
Charles Edwards .....	400	Fra Parker .....	210
Wm Exam .....	150	Widdo Long .....	104
Major Lewis Burwell .....	7000	Trustram Northworthy .....	1000
Henry Applewaite .....	1500	George Green .....	250
Thomas Pitt .....	300	Jno Druer .....	100
Jno Pitt .....	3400	Philip Peerce .....	500
Mary Benn .....	675	Wm Best .....	100
Robert Clark .....	450	Humphrey Marshall .....	600
Antho Holliday .....	860	Thomas Brewer .....	200
Wm Westrah .....	450	Wm Smith .....	2100
Elizabeth Gardner .....	100	Samuel & Wm Bridger .....	12900
Jno Gardner .....	246	Wm Williams .....	100
Jno Turner .....	950	Richard Ratcliffe .....	380
Antho Foulgham .....	100	Joshua Jordan .....	150
Anne Williams .....	150	Daniali Sandbourne .....	180
Edward Harris .....	240	Nicholas Houghan .....	780
Jno Cotton .....	200	Mary Marshall .....	200
Thomas Joyner .....	1400	Joseph Godwin .....	250
Jno Lawrence .....	400	Joseph Bridger .....	580
Thomas Mandue .....	200	Henry Pitt .....	700
Wm Mayo .....	300	James Baron .....	300
Jno Garcand .....	100	Arthur Smith .....	3607
James Bryan .....	1200	Robert Broch .....	400
Wm Keate .....	200	Wm Godwin .....	400
Jno Browne .....	100	Hugh Bracey .....	1000
Francis Sanders .....	100	Henry Turner .....	350
John Rogers .....	200	Thomas Wootten .....	963
Hodges Councie .....	420	Richard Reynolds Esq .....	853
Hardy Councie .....	900	Richard Reynolds .....	746
Jno Councie .....	760	Jno Parnell .....	400
Thomas Reeves .....	600	Benj Deall .....	467
Wm Crumpler .....	580	Thdo. Joyner .....	595
Bridgeman Joyner .....	1100	Jno Jordan .....	100
Elizabeth Swan .....	600	Henry Wiggs .....	506
Thomas Jones .....	700	Wm Body .....	1375
Arthur Whitehead .....	250	Arthur Purcell .....	750
Thomas Allen .....	150	Jno Porteus .....	100
Jerimiah Exam .....	300	Wm West .....	690
Nicholas Casey .....	550	Simon Everett .....	1100
Jno Giles .....	1150	Walter Waters .....	150
Alexander Camoll .....	200	John Jordan .....	150
Jno Rutter .....	300	John Nevill .....	433
Godfrey Hunt .....	600	Robert Colman .....	1500
Wm Trygell .....	100	Wm Green .....	150
Benj Jorden .....	150	Mary Cobb .....	150

## APPENDIX

197

Robert Edwards .....	150	Henry Pope .....	557
Anne Jones .....	100	John Williams .....	971
Abraham Jones .....	600	Henry Sanders .....	700
John Jones .....	200	Jno Selloway .....	900
Richard Lewis .....	100	Jno Bardin .....	100
Henry Dullard .....	100	Phill Rayford .....	650
Thomas Williams .....	100	Phill Pearse .....	500
James Mercer .....	100	Jno Terseley .....	150
Poole Hall .....	350	Geo Northworthy .....	1176
Jno Howell .....	100	Robert Richards .....	450
Thomas Lovett .....	100	Thomas Bevan .....	100
George Anderson .....	150	Wm Hunter .....	150
Daniell Nottiboy .....	100	Madison Street .....	150
Henry Wilkinson .....	350	Thomas Wheatley .....	400
Jno Watkins .....	200	Richard Wilkinson .....	150
Thomas English .....	100	James Bragg .....	500
Thomas Page .....	203	Jno Portous .....	300
Francis Davis .....	100	Thomas Harris .....	350
Richard Braswell .....	100	Edward Harris .....	100
Robert Johnson .....	2450	Nicholas Askew .....	80
Jno Minshea .....	300	Ambrose Hadley .....	100
Wm Pryan .....	200	Widdo Powell .....	480
Wm Dawes .....	400	Thomas Jones .....	100
Nicholas Tyner .....	300	Thomas Underwood .....	100
Isaac Ricks .....	700	Robert King .....	300
Robert Scott .....	300	Thomas Giles .....	880
Jno Roberts .....	950	Lewis Smelly .....	550
Wm Duck .....	180	Wm Smelly .....	280
Robert Lawrence .....	400	Godfrey Hunt .....	600
Jno Denson .....	200	Edmund Godwin .....	400
Robert Smelly .....	600	Wm Williams .....	1000
Francis Bridle .....	250	John Wilson .....	1200
Roger Fearlton .....	237	John Bryan .....	200
Thomas Bullock .....	100	John Askew .....	100
Wm. Marfry .....	600	Samuell Bridger .....	200
Thomas Powell .....	100	Roger Nevill .....	200
Widdo Glyn .....	390	Coll Godwin .....	600
Jno Pope .....	250	Jacob Durden .....	500
Thomas Gayle .....	200		
Wm Powell .....	200		138533
Richard Hutchins .....	300		
Henry Boseman .....	100		

Wm Bridger.

A Compleat List of the Rent Roll of the Land in Nansemond County  
In Anno 1704

John Murdaugh .....	300	Robert Baker .....	50
Jno Duke .....	113	Isaac Sketto .....	100
Thomas Duke Jun .....	930	Edward Sketto .....	200
Edward Roberts .....	250	Antho Gumms .....	50
Paul Pender .....	240	Francis Sketto .....	100
Thomas Duke .....	400	Wm Parker .....	100
James Fowler .....	440	Francis Parker .....	170

## APPENDIX

Thomas Parker .....	300	John Harris .....	600
Jno Small .....	100	Francis Copeland .....	513
Moses Hall .....	95	Elizabeth Price .....	150
Edward Beamond .....	550	Wm Hill .....	150
Richard Parker .....	514	Thomas Spivey .....	200
Capt James Jessey .....	550	Jno Campbell .....	400
Wm Sanders .....	200	Jno Morley .....	100
Jno Sanders .....	165	Jos Rogers .....	15
Thomas Mansfield .....	60	Jno Cole .....	814
Wm Woodley .....	350	Thomas Harrald .....	100
Andrew Bourne .....	200	Christopher Gawin Jun .....	20
Gilbert Owen .....	120	Daniell Horton .....	200
Wm Sanders Jun .....	165	Wm Bruin .....	300
Capt John Speir .....	500	Peter Eason .....	400
Capt James Reddick .....	943	Anne Pugh .....	2300
James Griffin .....	500	Benj Blanchard .....	130
Nicholas Stallings .....	965	Thomas Norfleet .....	500
John Stallings .....	250	John Odum .....	50
Richard Stallings .....	165	Thomas Gough .....	150
Elias Stallings Jun .....	250	Hugh Gough .....	150
Joseph Baker .....	740	Epapap Boyne .....	100
Wm Jones .....	500	Henry Baker .....	375
Robert Roundtree .....	245	Christopher Gwin .....	1010
John Roundtree .....	475	James Speirs .....	200
George Spivey .....	200	Epaphra Benton .....	250
James Spivey .....	600	Wm Eason .....	180
James Knight .....	300	Andrew Brown .....	25
Jno Gorden .....	330	Wm Horne .....	100
Edward Arnold .....	80	Robert Reddick .....	200
James Mulleny .....	500	Henry Hackley .....	210
Thomas Docton .....	200	Thomas Roberts .....	30
Wm Britt .....	400	Abr. Reddick .....	400
Nath Newby .....	850	Jno Parker .....	240
Elias Stalling .....	470	Richard Barefield .....	900
Robert Lassiter .....	850	John Benton .....	660
Patrick Wood .....	200	Jno Pipkin .....	100
Wm Thompson .....	133	Jos Brady .....	250
Jonathan Kitterell .....	300	Christopher Dudley .....	200
Adam Rabey .....	586	Thomas Norris .....	100
Jno Powell .....	758	Thomas Wiggins .....	100
John Reddick .....	300	Patrick Lawley .....	50
Henry Copeland .....	150	Robert Warren .....	100
Thomas Davis .....	250	Richard Odium .....	50
Jno Smith .....	100	Thomas Davis .....	340
Thomas Harrald .....	652	Thomas Barefield .....	100
Richard Baker .....	40	John Eason .....	150
Samuell Smith .....	230	Jerimiah Arlin .....	250
Wm Hood .....	200	Jno Perry .....	870
Thomas Roundtree .....	350	Jno Drury .....	87
Henry Hill .....	175	Joseph Booth .....	987
Jno Larkhum .....	500	Cresham Cofield .....	350
Wm Vann .....	100	Richard Sumner .....	600
Joseph Cooper .....	267	Edward Norfleet .....	200

## APPENDIX

199

Jno Norfleet .....	600	John Oxley .....	100
Edward Moore .....	250	Benj. Rogers .....	600
Thomas Moore .....	200	Robert Rogers .....	300
James Lawry .....	40	Henry Jerregan .....	200
James Daughtie .....	400	Jno Hansell .....	500
John Wallis .....	150	Henry Jenkins .....	400
Richard Sanders Jun .....	100	Capt William Hunter .....	800
Wm Byrd .....	300	Jno Moore .....	200
James Howard .....	700	Richard Moore .....	250
John Brinkley .....	430	Edward Homes .....	300
Robert Horning .....	80	Fra. Cambridge .....	100
Wm Speirs .....	200	Wm Ward .....	200
Sarah Exum .....	150	Jno Rice .....	140
Jno Larrence .....	175	Wm Battaile .....	800
Nicholas Perry .....	200	Wm Spite .....	500
Sampson Merridith .....	400	Abr. Oadham .....	20
Coll Thomas Milner .....	1484	Jacob Oadam .....	20
Joseph Merridith .....	250	Jno Lee .....	100
Thomas Kinder .....	160	Wm Macklenny .....	200
Henry King .....	300	Robert Coleman .....	1400
Joseph Hine .....	150	Jno Bryan .....	200
Wm King .....	140	Wm Daughtree .....	100
Julian King .....	700	Jno Copeland .....	600
Mich. King .....	80	Jno Butler .....	200
Capt Tho Godwin Jun .....	697	James Butler .....	75
Henry Lawrence .....	200	Thomas Roads .....	75
Jno King .....	1000	Wm Collins .....	1220
Richard Hyne .....	200	Jno Hedgpath .....	700
Capt Francis Milner .....	479	Jno Holland .....	700
Benj Nevill .....	475	Robert Carr .....	200
Elizabeth Marler .....	80	Wm Waters .....	600
Wm Keene .....	200	Robert Lawrence .....	400
Jno Symmons .....	678	Wm Bryon .....	350
Hen: Johnson .....	150	Lewis Bryon .....	400
Jno Darden .....	500	James Lawrence .....	100
Wm Everett .....	150	Wm Gatlin .....	100
Wm Pope .....	890	Joseph Gutchins .....	250
Joseph Worrell .....	270	George Lawrence .....	400
Thomas Jemegan Jun .....	135	Lewis Daughtree .....	100
Richard Lawerence .....	200	Thomas Rogers .....	50
Jonathan Robinson .....	400	Jno Rogers .....	200
Robert Yates .....	150	Henry Core .....	50
Thomas Odium .....	20	Edward Cobb .....	100
John Barefield .....	300	Richard Taylor .....	300
John Raules .....	600	Robert Brewer .....	200
Thomas Boyt .....	400	Wm Osburne .....	200
Thomas Vaughan .....	200	Thomas Biswell .....	400
Jno Parker .....	300	Jno Gatlin .....	200
Richard Green .....	200	Richard Folk .....	100
Elizabeth Ballard .....	300	Thomas Parker .....	100
Samuell Watson .....	200	Peter Parker .....	140
Francis Spight .....	400	Wm Parker .....	140
Joseph Ballard .....	200	Richard Hine Jun .....	200

## APPENDIX

Stephen Archer .....	200	Nicholas Hunter .....	190
Charles Roades .....	800	Richard Webb .....	200
Henry Roades .....	100	John Hare .....	190
James Collings .....	300	Christopher Norfleet .....	400
Henry Holland .....	400	Jno Heslop .....	148
Wm Kerle .....	325	Francis Benton .....	200
Joseph Holland .....	100	Capt Wm Sumner .....	275
Jno Thomas Jun .....	100	Elizabeth Syrte .....	100
Jno Thomas .....	275	Anne Hare .....	600
Thomas Mason .....	350	Jno Porter .....	450
Edward Mason .....	150	Edward Welsh .....	100
Jno Sanders .....	150	Jno Winbourne .....	400
Mich Brinkley .....	200	Paul Pender .....	200
James Moore .....	400	Mich Cowling .....	100
Henry Blumpton .....	1500	John Cowling .....	100
Jno Symmons .....	100	Rowland Gwyn .....	75
Jeremiah Edmunds .....	70	Andrew Ross .....	150
John Gay .....	200	Jno Ballard .....	400
Philip Aylberry .....	100	Benjamin Montgomery .....	910
James Copeland .....	390	Thomas Corbell .....	200
Jno Brothers .....	460	Jno Yates .....	400
Richard Creech .....	200	Jno White .....	150
Richard Bond .....	90	George White .....	50
Thomas Handcock .....	30	Jno Bond .....	150
James Knott .....	1050	Wm Hay .....	100
Wm Edwards .....	150	Henry Bowes .....	600
Robert Elkes .....	175	Wm Sevill .....	85
Edward Price .....	140	Jno Hambleton .....	200
Jane Belson .....	100	Robert Jordan .....	850
Wm Staples .....	210	James Howard .....	25
Robert Mountgomery .....	150	Ruth Coefield .....	110
John Moore .....	100	Jno Chilcott .....	100
Capt Edmund Godwin .....	800	Jno Rutter .....	80
Thomas Wakefield .....	150	Thomas Rutter .....	75
Godfrey Hunt .....	360	Wm. Rutter .....	75
Henry Wilkinson .....	250	Capt Barnaby Kerney .....	460
Nicholas Dixon .....	200	Thomas Cutchins .....	150
George Keeley .....	650	Robert Lawrence .....	130
Richard Taylor .....	300	Samuell Cahoon .....	240
Anne Coefield .....	300	Jno Iles .....	220
Joseph Hollyday .....	1000	Thomas Sawyer .....	180
Mr. Jno Braisseur .....	400	Wm Outland .....	400
Thomas Best .....	160	Coll George Northworthy .....	650
Alexander Campbell .....	500	Coll Thomas Godwin .....	810
Capt Charles Drury .....	570	Caleb Taylor .....	200
Thomas Drury .....	75	Thomas Carnell .....	320
Luke Shea .....	650	Richard Bradley .....	250
John Babb .....	500	Jno Corbin .....	300
Abraham Edwards .....	400	Wm Sykes .....	150
Richard Sanders .....	500	Major Thomas Jorden .....	700
Antho Wallis .....	80	Richard Lovegrove .....	150
Daniell Sullivan .....	100	Thomas Davis .....	144
Joseph Ellis .....	290	Samuell Farmer .....	160

## APPENDIX

201

Henry Bradley .....	500	James Murphice .....	160
Jno Clarke .....	25	Robert Peale .....	275
Margarett Jorden .....	200	John Peters .....	368
Wm Elkes .....	100	James Peters .....	340
Humphrey Mires .....	150	John Wakefield .....	50
James Ward .....	100	Richard Wynn .....	890
Widdow Hudnell .....	45	James Lockhart .....	800
Wm Grandberry .....	300	John Keeton .....	2000
Israell Shepherd .....	200		
Benj. Small .....	100		117024
Anne Crandberry .....	75	Jno Murrow .....	200
Charles Roberts .....	50		
Richard Sclator .....	300		117224
Robert Murrow .....	320	Added to make up equall	13850
Elizabeth Peters .....	334	the last year list	
Thomas Jones .....	200	which may be supposed	131074
Elizabeth Butler .....	200	to be held by persons	
Coll Samuell Bridger .....	500	that have not made both	
Jno Lawrence .....	100		
Thomas Jarregan .....	165	Persons living out of the County	
Thomas Jarregan Jun .....	600	and other that will not pay or give	
Wm Drury .....	80	account. Viz:	
Wm Butler .....	120	Capt Thomas Lovett	
Henry Jenkins .....	860	Capt Jno Wright	
Edward Bathurst .....	250	Fra Parker Jun	
Thomas Houffler .....	200	Tho Martin	
Edward Streater .....	200	Jno Wright	
Wm Duffield .....	50	Wm Lapiter	
Charles Thomas Jun .....	50	Jno Lapiter	
Jno Blessington .....	150	Capt Luke Haffield	
Ursula Goodwin .....	100	Mrs Elizabeth Swann	
Thomas Acwell .....	440		
Wm Peale .....	180	Errors excepted per me	
John Lambkin .....	50	Henry Jenkins	

## An Alphabetical List of the Quit Rents of Norfolk County 1704

Ashley Dennis .....	150	Bayley Walter .....	290
Avis Widdow .....	50	Bruce Jno .....	300
Adam Wm .....	100	Bishop Wm .....	100
Alexander John .....	300	Bull Henry .....	1500
Barington Wm .....	100	Bucken Wm .....	410
Bartee Robert .....	150	Babington Thomas .....	150
Bull Robert Sen .....	1050	Babington Jno .....	150
Blanch Wm .....	100	Babington Rich .....	50
Bond Wm .....	200	Burges George .....	200
Brown Widdow .....	270	Burges Robert .....	535
Bruce Abraham .....	1010	Butt Richard .....	1840
Brown Wm .....	100	Brown Edward .....	300
Bowers Jno .....	166	Bigg Thomas .....	100
Bolton Wm .....	212	Balingtine Alexander .....	300
Byron Roger .....	200	Balengtine George .....	510

## APPENDIX

Bull Thomas .....	2200	Etherdge Edward .....	66
Bramble Henry .....	100	Etherdge Wm .....	250
Blake Arthur .....	200	Etherdge Wm Jun .....	80
Bolton Richard .....	700	Etherdge Marmaduke .....	525
Branton John .....	330	Edmonds John .....	50
Bacheldon Joseph .....	300	Ellis Wm .....	200
Bush Samuell Major .....	1628	Etherdge Edward Cooper ..	200
Balingtine Wm .....	60	Estwood Thomas .....	170
Bowles Henry .....	330	Estwood John .....	75
Cartwright Peter .....	1050	Etherdge Edward Sen .....	33
Cooper Wm .....	150	Edwards John .....	250
Cooper Jno .....	150	Etherdge Charles .....	75
Cramore George .....	100	Evans Abrigall .....	100
Carling Walton .....	50	Furgison Thomas .....	100
Carling Joseph .....	200	Freeman Jno .....	190
Curch Richard .....	1050	Foreman Alexander .....	750
Churey Widdow .....	600	Foster Henry .....	1000
Cuthrell Going .....	470	Ferbey Jno .....	500
Crekmore Edward .....	800	Fulsher Jno .....	1396
Cartwright Widdow .....	800	Godfry Waren .....	350
Corprew Jno .....	650	Godfry John .....	1470
Corprew Thomas .....	650	Godfry Matthew .....	450
Crekmore Jno .....	750	Grefen Jno .....	200
Caswell Widdow .....	350	Garen Daniell .....	50
Colley Jno .....	100	Guy John .....	110
Cottell Thomas .....	200	Gwin Wm .....	350
Conden Thomas .....	390	Gilhgum Ferdinando .....	182
Conner Lewis .....	2200	Gilhgan John .....	200
Carney Jno .....	100	Gresnes James .....	150
Carney Richard .....	100	Gaines John .....	50
Collins Wm .....	100	Guy James .....	100
Crekmore Edmund .....	690	Herbert Thomas .....	150
Charleton Jno .....	50	Hayes Wm .....	200
Cutrell Thomas .....	150	Harris John .....	110
Chapman Richard .....	50	Holiday Jno .....	440
Churey Thomas .....	100	Hodges Joseph .....	50
Churey Jno .....	150	Hoges Thomas .....	407
Dixon Jno .....	300	Hoges John .....	520
Davis Wm Sen .....	250	Hollowell Jno Sen .....	524
Davis Wm .....	158	Hollygood Thomas .....	100
Dredall Robert .....	318	Hollowell Jno .....	200
Davis Thomas .....	332	Holsted Henry .....	633
Desnall Wm .....	100	Hollowell Joseph .....	1280
Davis Edward .....	300	Holsted John .....	350
Dalley Henry .....	1524	Hues Edward .....	1304
Dalley Wm .....	156	Hullett Jno .....	300
Davis Thomas .....	340	Hodges Roger .....	109
Denby Edward .....	100	Hodges Thomas .....	50
Daniell Hugh .....	100	Hodges Richard .....	375
Etherdge Thomas Cooper ..	75	Harvey Richard .....	265
Etherdge Thomas B R ..	50	Handberry .....	300
Etherdge Thomas Sen .....	34	Hollowell Elener .....	1550
Etherdge Thomas Jun ....	33	Herbert Jno .....	400

## APPENDIX

203

Hargrave Benjamin .....	250	Nash Thomas .....	50
Hartwell Richard .....	150	Nicholson Henry .....	320
Henland Jno .....	800	Nash Richard .....	100
Ivey George .....	496	Nicholson Wm .....	300
Jackson Symon .....	720	Norcote Thomas .....	273
Ives Timothy .....	400	Outlaw Edward .....	208
Ives Timothy Jun .....	100	Owens Wm .....	650
Ives John .....	434	Odyam Wm .....	200
Johnston John .....	275	Pearce Wm .....	100
Johnston Mercey .....	275	Peters Widdow .....	698
Joles Thomas .....	200	Portlock .....	360
Joyce Jno .....	200	Porter Samuell .....	100
Jolef Jno Jun .....	300	Prescot Moses .....	1200
Jenings Henry .....	100	Philpot Richard .....	200
Jolef Jno Sen .....	840	Powell Richard .....	100
Kaine Richard .....	50	Powell Lemuell .....	246
Langley Wm .....	1487	Powell Wm .....	624
Langley Thomas .....	878	Perkins Wm .....	50
Loveney James .....	100	Patison Robert .....	350
Luelling Edward .....	315	Roberts Jos .....	100
Luelling Richard .....	200	Robert Samuell .....	800
Lovell Widdow .....	740	Rose Robert .....	385
Low Henry .....	191	Rose Jno .....	60
Lane Robert .....	460	Randall Giles .....	150
Ludgall Matthew .....	250	Richardson Thomas .....	379
Levima John .....	510	Spring Robert .....	98
Lenton Wm .....	150	Spivey Matt .....	600
Mercer Thomas .....	600	Smith John .....	127
Maning Thomas .....	97	Scoll Thomas .....	400
Maning Nicholas .....	260	Smith Richard .....	600
Mones Joseph .....	73	Smith John .....	200
Matthias Matthew .....	100	Silvester Richard .....	1280
Miller Wm .....	1090	John Smith Sen .....	1200
Miller Jno .....	200	Sickes Walter Sen .....	550
Miller Widdow .....	100	Sickes John .....	200
Murden Widdow .....	2000	Sugg George .....	408
Miller Thomas .....	1050	Sugg Wm .....	200
Maund Wm .....	200	Sayer Francis .....	600
Maning Jno Sen .....	300	Smith Humphrey .....	100
Miller Joseph .....	882	Standbro Jno .....	40
Mocey Dennis Sen & Jun...	160	Standley Richard .....	200
Mohan James .....	100	Sharples Henry .....	100
Murfrey Alexander .....	800	Sugg Joseph .....	300
Maning Jno Jun .....	100	Symons Thomas .....	166
Moseley Widdow .....	300	Symon James .....	200
Miller Widdow Sen .....	200	Sparrow Wm .....	350
Mason Thomas .....	125	Tuker Wm .....	100
Masom Lemuell .....	400	Thornton Francis .....	200
Mason Thomas .....	653	Thurston Matthew .....	100
Mason George .....	300	Theobald James .....	140
Mockey Adam .....	400	Thellaball Widdow .....	600
Newton George .....	1119	Tuker Richard .....	100
Nicholson Jno .....	160	Tuker Thomas .....	280

## APPENDIX

Taylor Jno .....	100	Whedon Jno Jun .....	320
Taylor Richard .....	75	White Patrick .....	500
Tully Jno .....	165	Willis John .....	470
Tarte Elezar Sen .....	300	Weldey Dorothy .....	25
Taylor Andrew .....	222	Ward Jno .....	320
Tuker Jno .....	400	Wakfield Thomas .....	40
Tart Alice .....	300	Wilden Nath .....	100
Tarte Elezar Jun .....	595	Wooding Thomas .....	170
Taylor Wm .....	265	Wood Edward .....	100
Trigoney Henry .....	200	Watford Joseph .....	97
Velle Moriss .....	335	Wate John .....	400
Wallice Thomas .....	150	Wright Wm .....	574
Weston Edward .....	100	Wright James .....	216
Willoughby Thomas Coll ..	3200	Wadborn Mich .....	500
Weshart John .....	150	Williams Jane .....	400
Woodly Robert .....	350	Webb Mary .....	100
Williams John .....	125	Wormington John .....	200
Wilder Mich .....	200	Wilden Francis .....	100
Watkins Thomas .....	190	Widdick Henry .....	343
Williamson Jno .....	750		
Whedon Jno Jun .....	100		113684
Willoughby Thomas Capt ..	660	New discovered Land .....	1615
Whedon Wm .....	200		
West John .....	500		112069
Watson Robert .....	80	An Account of the Land belonging to such persons out of the County and also others out of the County.	
Wallis Richard .....	250	Coll Cary .....	
Wallis Jno .....	135	Tully Robinson .....	
Wallis Wm .....	450	James Daves .....	
Whithurst Richard .....	150	Robert Berrey .....	95
Whithurst Wm .....	150	Jno Bennett .....	33
Wilkins Wm .....	200	Coll Nasareth .....	400
Williams John .....	200	Cornelius Tullery .....	150
Whedbey George .....	200		
Worden James .....	400	James Wilson .....	
Wilson James Jun .....	200	Sherriff .....	
Wilson Lemuell .....	300		
Wilson James Coll .....	2800		
Woodward Henry .....	280		

## Princess Anne County Rent Roll 1704

John Carraway .....	180	Thomas Jolley .....	150
Thomas More .....	100	Mich Ventres .....	450
Henry Chapman .....	250	Capt Blomer Bray .....	270
George Poole .....	1085	James Mecoy .....	200
James Whithurst .....	600	Francis Bond .....	264
Thomas Morris .....	63	Edward Wood .....	50
Thomas Joy .....	600	Jno Morrah .....	200
Thomas Scott .....	100	Alexander Morrah .....	200
George Smith .....	250	Ruth Woodhouse .....	450
Thomas Hife .....	200	Horatia Woodhouse .....	525
Richard Smith .....	200	Joseph White .....	330
Thomas Hattersley .....	90	Jon Basnett .....	250

Owen Wilbe .....	100	Wm. Moore .....	414
Mr. Wm. Corneck .....	1974	Mr. Henry Woodhouse .....	3000
Jno Oakham .....	390	Tully Emperor .....	300
David Scott .....	600	Jno. Godfrey .....	170
Jno Keeling .....	2000	Wm Dyer .....	700
Adam Keeling .....	500	Edward Cooper .....	200
Humphrey Smith .....	50	Wm Ship .....	300
Jno Halise .....	130	Jno Buck .....	250
Capt Wm Crawford .....	2650	Peter Mallbourn .....	280
Richard Williamson .....	450	Benjamin Roberts .....	100
Edward Tranter .....	180	Capt Jno Gibbs .....	3100
Jno. Sherland .....	800	Sarah Sanford .....	1200
Robert Rany .....	70	Henry Harrison .....	300
Edward Old .....	450	James Lemon .....	1500
Coll Lemuell Mason .....	650	Wm Wallsworth .....	100
Mr. Francis Emperor .....	400	Wm Capps .....	1050
James Kemp .....	681	Jacob Taylor .....	80
Bartho: Williamson .....	400	Stephen Pace .....	50
Symon Hancock Jun .....	200	Adam Hayes .....	1360
George Batten .....	150	Wm Chichester .....	400
Matth: Brinson .....	250	Robert Dearemore .....	514
Mr. Edward Moseley Sen..	1000	Capt. Francis Morse .....	1300
Wm Martin .....	200	Patrick Anguish .....	150
James Joslin .....	100	Thomas Brock .....	400
Alexander Lilburn .....	500	Wm Brock .....	100
James William .....	100	Jno Sullivant .....	200
Mr. Henry Spratt .....	1736	Francis Sheene .....	300
Symon Hancock Sen .....	300	Jno Acksted .....	400
Thomas Walk .....	298	Charles Hendley .....	100
Jno Kemp .....	340	Duke Hill .....	70
Randolph Lovett .....	100	Job Brooks .....	150
Edward Davis .....	200	Jno Brooks .....	100
Jno Sammons .....	150	Thomas Turton .....	110
Elizabeth Edwards .....	50	Peter Crosby .....	250
Mr. Benj. Burroughs .....	800	Jno Pisburn .....	314
Jno Muncreef .....	140	James Sherwood .....	200
Matt: Pallett .....	600	Edward Cannon .....	550
Mrs. Thurston .....	290	Richard Capp; .....	100
Lancaster Lovett .....	1850	John Doley .....	640
Robert Cartwright .....	260	Matthew Mathias .....	80
Jno. Cartwright .....	100	Mr. James Peters .....	889
Nath: Macklakan .....	100	Jno Owens .....	190
Adam Thorowgood .....	700	Josvas Morris .....	900
Henry Walstone .....	800	Thomas Mason .....	140
Edward Land .....	400	Wm. Wishart .....	200
Thomas Hall .....	400	Jno Russell .....	300
Wm. Catherill .....	150	Stephen Sall .....	250
Doctor Browne .....	600	Timothy Dennis .....	100
John Richardson .....	1000	George Walker .....	425
Robert Richmond .....	1000	Wm. Ashby .....	100
Thomas Benson .....	225	Charles Griffin .....	216
Lewis Pervine .....	800	Symon Franklin .....	100
Edward Attwood .....	400	Alice Thrower .....	125

## APPENDIX

James Wishart .....	225	Giles Collier .....	500
Richard Draught .....	500	Jacob Johnson .....	1700
Doctor Wm. Hunter .....	80	Alexander Willis .....	150
Mr. Jon Sanders .....	203	Richard Bonny .....	2000
Wm Grinto .....	650	Mr. James Doage .....	784
Henry Fithgerrelld .....	200	Antho: Barnes .....	200
Coll. H. Lawson .....	3100	Jno. Macklalin .....	120
Capt. John Thorowgood .....	1000	Thomas Etherington .....	108
Robert Thorowgood .....	940	Jno James .....	328
Henry Southern .....	640	Wm. Woodhouse .....	300
John Wharton .....	850	John Mayho .....	160
Joseph Doller .....	150	Joseph Perry .....	35
Jno Briggs .....	600	Thomas Perry .....	650
Francis Jones .....	100	Mr. Argoll Thorowgood .....	1000
Thomas Lurrey .....	100	Capt. Wm. Moseley .....	600
Thomas Walker .....	820	Jno Moseley .....	325
Steph Swaine .....	450	Wm. Smith .....	180
Edward Mulsin .....	100	Wm. Symmons .....	400
George Bullock .....	300	Adam Forguson .....	120
Jno Leggett .....	400	Banj. Commins .....	200
Mark Tully .....	300	Jno Elkes .....	500
Wm. Walstone .....	400	Patrick White .....	1250
Mark Powell .....	550	Richard Jones .....	200
Elizabeth Nicholls .....	500	Evan Jones .....	600
Hugh Hoskins .....	50	Mich. Jones .....	200
Wm. Burrough .....	50	Richard Wicker .....	300
Wm. Warren .....	100	Henry Snaile .....	250
Capt. Hugh Campble .....	800	Mr. Samuel Bush .....	550
George Worrinton .....	400	Mr. Tully Robinson .....	500
James Tully .....	400	Jno Briberry .....	50
Wm. Lovett .....	1300	Wm. Moseley .....	50
Wm. Grant .....	150	Capt. Christ. Merchant .....	400
Thomas More .....	100	Richard Cox .....	50
Richard Whithurst .....	350	Matt. Godfrey .....	150
Capt. Thomas Cocke .....	800	Thomas Tully .....	600
John Comins .....	175	Hector Denby .....	600
Thomas Griffin .....	200	Thomas Keeling .....	700
Thomas Spratt .....	600	Wm. More .....	100
Jno Russell .....	150	Thomas Cason .....	550
James Heath .....	550	Sarah Jackson .....	600
David Duncon .....	100	Jacob More .....	200
Daniell Lane .....	350		
George Fowler .....	600	Henry Spratt .....	98728
Jno Booth .....	350		

A True and Perfect Rent Roll of the Lands In Elizabeth City County  
for the Year 1704

Coll. Wm. Wilson .....	1024	Coll. Dudley Diggs .....	216
Mr. Wm. Smelt .....	150	Samuell Pearce .....	100
Mr. Pasquo Curle .....	300	Mary Jenings .....	250
Mr. Nicho. Curle .....	950	Mark Powell .....	184

## APPENDIX

207

Wm. Davis .....	42	Richard Roatton .....	50
Jno Skinner .....	50	Thomas Poole .....	1200
Thomas Baines .....	50	John Wheat Land .....	66
Wm. Latham .....	90	George Bell .....	80
Thomas Tucker .....	60	Widdow Ballis .....	350
Matthew Smell .....	100	George Walker .....	325
Charles Cooley .....	200	Mr. Robert Beverley .....	777
Jno Chandler .....	150	Jno House .....	157
Wm. Umpleet .....	25	Jno Bushell Jun .....	150
Charles Tucker .....	240	Roger Masinbred .....	50
Thomas Allin .....	227	John Shepherd .....	210
Wm. Williams per the School .....	600	Wm. Minsor .....	150
Wm Williams per himself..	260	Edward Lattimore .....	190
Mrs. Bridgett Jenkins .....	100	James Baker .....	225
Christopher Davis .....	25	Thomas Tucker .....	60
Wm. Spicer .....	60	Jno. Cotton .....	50
Thomas Hawkins .....	270	Mark Johnson .....	400
Jno Bowles .....	260	Major Wm. Armistead .....	460
Jno Theodam .....	100	Coll. Antho. Armistead .....	2140
Bartho. Wetherby .....	300	Daniell Preeday .....	50
Jos: White .....	200	Matthew Watts .....	454
Capt. Henry Royall .....	750	Bryan Penny .....	50
Robert Bright Sen.	100	Giles Dupra .....	150
Thomas Naylor .....	100	Jno Bayley .....	415
George Cooper Sen .....	100	Mary Simmons .....	200
Thomas Needham .....	100	Jno Parish .....	50
Cha: Cooper .....	100	Antho. Griggs .....	50
Wm. Dunn .....	100	Abr: Parish .....	100
Charles Jenings .....	225	Mark Parish .....	200
Samuell Davill .....	100	Benj. Smith .....	650
Paltey Davill .....	100	Thomas Nobling per Archer .....	212
Francis Rogers .....	200	Wm. Mallory .....	200
Thomas Babb per Selden ..	300	Widdow Croashell .....	100
Richard Horsley .....	90	Charles Powers .....	400
Sarah Nagleer .....	230	Robert Charwill per Jno Young .....	440
Henry Dunn .....	50	Samuell Fingall .....	333
Peter Pearce .....	50	Francis Savoy .....	50
Moses Davis .....	150	Mr. Edward Mihills .....	600
Mich: Brettuen .....	100	Jane Nichols .....	50
Henry Robinson .....	200	John Francis .....	25
Christo. Copeland .....	340	James Priest .....	50
Thomas Faulkner .....	50	Simon Hollier .....	200
Mr. James Wallace .....	1300	Mr. Thomas Gebb .....	630
Mr. Berthram Servant ..	418	Mr. Richard Booker .....	526
Robert Taylor .....	50	Mr. Wm. Lowry .....	526
Joseph Harris .....	50	Mr. Merry or Mrs Dunn..	500
Wm. Robinson .....	50	Wm. Haslyitt .....	100
Wm. Boswell .....	220	Capt. Augustine More .....	285
Wm. Winter .....	70	John More .....	250
John Lowry per Selden ...	110	John Passones .....	780
Edward Roe .....	100	Rebeckha Morgan .....	50
Henry James .....	100	Thomas Roberts .....	250

## APPENDIX

Mr. John Turner .....	50	Mr. Francis Ballard per
Henry Lais .....	50	Selden .....
Capt. Henry Jenkins .....	300	
		460

29560

Henry Royall Sgeriff

## A True &amp; Perfect Rent Roll of all the Lands that is held in Warwick County 1704

Major Wm. Cary .....	300	Francis Jones .....	150
Mr. Nedler Plantacon .....	80	Matthew Jones .....	750
Rober Hubbert .....	101	Jno. Read .....	875
Wm. Harwood .....	625	Mr. Brewer Land .....	1350
Richard Glanvills Orphans.	165	Mr. Henry Cary .....	670
Wm. Hubbert .....	200	Langhorne Orphans .....	602
Henry Gibbs .....	315	Coll. Coles Orphans .....	1350
Wm. Hewitt .....	150	Peter Jones .....	150
James Hill .....	135	Samuell Crew Orphans .....	150
John Golden .....	50	Samuell Symons .....	173
Thomas Harwood .....	575	Mrs. Elizabeth Whitaker .....	600
Jno. Harwood .....	704	Capt. Miles Cary .....	600
Capt. Thomas Charles .....	100	John Cannon .....	75
Hump: Harwood .....	400	John Linton .....	75
Matthew Wood .....	300	Richard Gough .....	60
Edward Joyner .....	60	Coll. Miles Cary .....	1960
Coll. Dudley Diggs .....	4626	Mr. Jno. Mallnote .....	61
Elizabeth Lucas .....	800	Rowlands Williams .....	170
John Hillard .....	74	Robert Chapell .....	150
Edward Loftes .....	60	James Chapell .....	100
Wm. Rowles Orphans .....	150	Edward Powers .....	200
Samuell Hatton .....	225	James White .....	40
Isaac Goodwin .....	225	Peter Sawers Orphans .....	95
George Robinson .....	70	Wm. Cotton .....	143
Seymon Powell .....	250	James Cotton .....	70
John Dawson .....	300	John Croley .....	100
Wades Orphans .....	100	Stephen Burgess .....	128
Henry Dawson .....	200	Widdow Yorgen .....	60
John Bowger .....	100	George Jackson .....	193
Joseph Cooper .....	200	Sarah Ranshaw .....	125
Robert Roberts .....	60	Richard Wootton .....	243
George Burton .....	330	Samuell Hoggard .....	120
Capt. Mills Wells .....	425	James Floyd .....	100
Roger Daniell Orphans .....	196	Fr: Rice Orphans .....	200
Jno Hansell .....	100	Mr. Math Hoggard .....	270
Emanuell Wells .....	325	Widdow Chapell .....	321
Elizabeth Wells Widdow .....	155	Thomas Ascow .....	50
Widdow Lewelling .....	100	Garrett Ridley .....	300
Wm. Wells .....	615	Samuell Ranshaw .....	238
Elias Wells .....	50	Charle Stuckey .....	86
Widdow Pierce .....	155	Jos Naylor .....	100
Thomas Haynes .....	850	Jos Russell .....	150
John Scarsbrook .....	850	Charles Allen .....	295

## APPENDIX

209

Wm. Newberrey .....	100	Wm Cook .....	29
John Turner .....	100	Jno Tignall .....	392
Wm. Smith .....	150	Thomas Mountfort .....	890
Elizabeth Holt .....	150	Joseph Mountfort .....	558
James Browne .....	150	James Priest .....	50
Henry Royall .....	246	Abr Cawley .....	80
Edward Rice .....	375	Wm. Jones .....	70
Thomas Blackistone .....	75	Edward Davis .....	200
Mark Noble .....	215	The County Land .....	150
James Reynolds .....	75	Denbigh per Gleab .....	130
John Holmes .....	200	Mulberry Island Gleab.....	50
Samuell Duberry .....	200	Thomas Hansford .....	75
Edward Powers .....	200	Mr. Rascows Orphans .....	1195
Jno Hatton Orphans .....	93		
Wm. Lowland .....	25		37685
Thomas Morey .....	363	Thomas Hansford never	
Wm. Bracey .....	150	before paid .....	75
Cope Doyley .....	500		
Nath Edwards .....	100		37610
Samuel Groves .....	490	Persons out of the County	
Croncher Orphans .....	50	Jno Trevillian ....	248
Henry Whitaker .....	60	Holman Orphans ..	200
Woodman Land .....	200	Robert Hubberd Sheriff	

## A Rent Roll of all the Land In York County 1704

Wm. Jackson .....	200	David Stoner .....	50
Matt: Pierce .....	100	Ralph Hubberd .....	50
Jno. Latin .....	150	Wm. Harrison .....	50
Robert Cobbs .....	100	Jno. Wyth .....	100
Francis Sharp .....	100	Thomas Hill .....	930
Geo: Baskewyle .....	350	Thomas Vines .....	200
Richard Gilford .....	100	Morgan Baptist .....	100
Jos: Frith .....	50	Phil. Deadman .....	75
Wm. Jones .....	70	Bazill Wagstaff .....	127
Nath: Crawley .....	384	Wm. Allen .....	117
Thomas Crips .....	750	Robert Read .....	750
Wm. Davis .....	200	Jos: Mountford .....	307
Lewis Bar noe .....	80	Roger Boult .....	100
Arthur Lun .....	50	Edward Fuller .....	70
Jno. Bates .....	669	Thomas Jefferson .....	100
Jno Serginton .....	150	Henry Duke .....	25
Wm. Taylor .....	100	Jno. Hansford .....	100
Richard Page .....	150	Robert Peters .....	160
Wm. Jorden .....	580	Jno. Morland .....	100
Jno. Lynes .....	150	Wm. Lee .....	350
Alex: Banyman .....	50	Richard Burt .....	200
Wm. Cobbs .....	50	John Eaton .....	170
Mary Whaley .....	550	Rob: Starke .....	250
Henry Tyler .....	180	Robt. Harrison .....	200
Richard Kendall .....	150	Jno. Morris .....	125
Wm. Hansford .....	300	James Bates .....	117
Nicholas Sebrell .....	150	Elizabeth Jones .....	94

## APPENDIX

Edward Young .....	100	Jos: Walker .....	615
Robert Green .....	200	Jno. Sanders .....	100
Tho: Fear .....	100	Mongo Inglis .....	400
Edward Thomas .....	223	Tho Holyday .....	100
John Loyall .....	100	Jno. Williams .....	100
Stephen Pond .....	200	Antho: Sebrell .....	50
Wm. Wise .....	850	Röbt. Jones .....	100
Cornelius Shoohorn .....	100	James Cansebee .....	200
Joseph White .....	750	Richd. Booker .....	200
Daniell Park Esq. ....	2750	James Morris .....	100
Thomas Fear Jun .....	130	Henry Adkinson .....	82
Orlando Jones .....	450	Robt. Jackson .....	150
Ambrose Cobbs .....	163	Anthonye Robinson .....	183
Henry Dyer .....	50	Hannah Lamb .....	50
Wm. Davis .....	100	James Calthorp .....	900
Wm. Buckner .....	302½	Tho Boulmer .....	265
Tho. Barber .....	600	Peter Pasque .....	12
Elizb. Tindall .....	60	Jno. Chapman .....	70
Dudley Diggs .....	1350	Jno. Pond .....	112
Wm. Hewitt .....	150	Sarah Tomkins .....	250
Mary Collier .....	433	Robt. Kirby .....	200
Charles Collier .....	684	Tho. Kirby .....	270
Tho. Hansford .....	75	Edward Curtis .....	200
Geo. Browne .....	150	Jno. Forgison .....	200
Wm. Gibbs .....	50	Wm. Row .....	902
Wm. Pekithman .....	650	Jno. Hunt .....	550
Jno. Smith .....	150	Wm. Taverner .....	100
Baldwin Matthews .....	1300	Armiger Wade .....	424
Jno Daniell .....	200	Richard Dixon .....	450
Seamor Powell .....	130	Edmund Jennings Esq. ....	1650
Jno. Lewis Esq. ....	300	Jno. Persons .....	300
Wm. Timson .....	1000	Tho. Nutting .....	375
Jno. Page .....	490	Peter Manson .....	150
Jos. Benjafield .....	80	Richard Slaughter .....	275
Tho. Stear .....	60	James Persons .....	350
Stephen Fouace .....	565	Tho. Roberts .....	450
Edmund Jenings Esq. ....	850	Jno. Toomer .....	335
Elizb. Archer .....	370	Daniell Taylor .....	225
Wm. Coman .....	50	Robert Hayes .....	220
Elizb. Hansford .....	100	Henry Andros .....	274
Samll: Hill .....	25	Jno. Wells .....	750
Jno. Anderson .....	50	Robert Curtis .....	250
Tho. Buck .....	250	Tho. Cheesman Sen. ....	1800
Lewis Burwell .....	2100	Jos Potter .....	25
Robt. Crawley .....	400	Hen: Heywood .....	1300
Robt. Hyde .....	200	David Holyday .....	600
Robt. Harrison .....	250	John Northern .....	130
Jeffry Overstreet .....	50	Jno. Doswell .....	367
Tho. Overstreet .....	50	Isaac Powell .....	100
John Myhill .....	52	Symon Staice .....	200
Mary Roberts .....	25	Jno. Drewet .....	200
Benja. Stogsdall .....	50	Robert Topladie .....	100
Tho Wade .....	375	Jno. Potter .....	93

# APPENDIX

211

Lewis Vernum .....	150	Wm. Gurrow .....	150
James Slaughter .....	250	Peter Goodwin .....	400
Tho: Burnham .....	50	Robt. Snead .....	50
Jno: Doswell Jun .....	100	Edward Cawley .....	150
Robert Shields .....	400	Wm. Gorden .....	150
Wm. Wilson .....	50	Jno. Hilsman .....	75
Owen Davis .....	247	Jno. Wright .....	100
Tho. Walker .....	100	Jno. Gibons .....	50
Richard Nixon .....	150	Elizb. Goodwin .....	1200
Henry Clerk .....	100	Samuell Cooper .....	150
Elias Love .....	25	Jno. Fips .....	150
Wm. Howard .....	100	Tho Wooton .....	150
Jno. Sanderver .....	100	Edward Moss .....	759
Jno. Cox .....	50	Rebecka Watkins .....	100
Tho. Gibbins .....	100	Wm. Whitaker .....	1800
Tho. Hind .....	100	Hampton Parish .....	200
Tho Cheesman Jun .....	600	Bruton parish Gleabe .....	300
Wm. Browne .....	200	Robt. Ivy he living in James City County & no Tennt. on ye Land....	100
Jno. Rogers .....	650		
Jno. Moss .....	150		
Jno. Lawson .....	100		
Nicho. Philips .....	150		
Wm. Sheldon .....	750		
Jno. Wayman .....	100		
Tho Edmonds .....	150		
Lawrence Smith .....	1700		
James Paulmer .....	150		
			<b>61132½</b>
		Added to make up the old Roll .....	<b>168</b>
			<b>61300½</b>
		<b>Wm. Barbar S Y C</b>	

## The Rent Roll of the Land in James City County 1704

### A

Adkinson Tho .....	50
Adkinson Henry .....	250
Armestone Joshua .....	50
Adams Anne .....	150
Argo James .....	200
Abbitt Francis .....	100
Apercon Wm. ....	80
Allen Richard .....	540
	<b>1420</b>

### B

Baker Jno. ....	100
Bentley Jno. ....	125
Bess Edmund .....	75
Burwell Lewis .....	1350
Beckitt Tho .....	60
Bray James .....	3500
Bryon Jno. ....	100
Bingley James .....	100
Benham Jno. ....	50
Brown James .....	250

Bowers Wm. ....	50
Broadnax Wm. ....	1683
Bayley Wm. ....	100
Black Geo. ....	200
Bush Jno. ....	800
Ballard Tho .....	100
Bray David .....	5758
Burton Ralph .....	200
Blankitt Henry .....	100
Brand Richard .....	125
Breeding Jno. ....	100
Bruer Thackfield .....	350
Blackley Wm. ....	142
Barratt Wm. ....	305
Barron Tho .....	100
Blankes Henry .....	650
Bagby Tho .....	180
Barnes Francis .....	200
Brackitt Tho .....	150
Browne Wm. ....	1070
Buxton Samuell .....	300
Bimms Christo. ....	300
Ballard Wm. ....	300

## APPENDIX

Boman .....	90	Frayser Jno .....	250
Benge Robert .....	60	Fox Wm. ....	50
		Fouace Stephen .....	150
	19123	Fish Jno. ....	100
		Freeman George .....	197
		Furrbush Wm. ....	400
		Flanders Francis .....	350
C			
Center Jno .....	100		
Clerk Wm. ....	1100		
Charles Phill .....	200		
Capell Tho. ....	200		
Cearley Wm. ....	450		
Clerk Robert .....	300		
Clerk Sarah .....	200		
Cole Richard .....	80		
Cooper Tho. ....	60		
Cook Richard .....	75		
Cosby Charles .....	250		
Crawley Robert .....	460		
Cryer George .....	100		
Cobbs Ambrose .....	350		
Cock Jonathan .....	250		
Cowles Thomas .....	675		
	4850		
D			
Dormar Jno. ....	100		
Drummond Wm. ....	150		
Deane Jno. ....	150		
Duckitt Abraham .....	290		
Danzee Jno Jacob Coigman	4111		
Deane Tho. ....	80		
Deane Wm. ....	100		
Drummond Jno. ....	700		
Deane Tho. ....	150		
Duke Tho. ....	750		
Davey Francis .....	778		
Doby Jno. ....	300		
Duke Henry Jun .....	50		
Duke Henry Esq. ....	2986		
	11695		
E			
Elerby Elizabeth .....	600		
Edmunds Elizabeth .....	175		
Eggleston Joseph .....	550		
Eglestone Benj. ....	1375		
	2700		
F			
Feearecloth Tho. ....	277		
Farthing Wm. ....	50		
G			
Goodrich Benj. ....	1650		
Gwin Jno. ....	100		
Garey Tho. ....	60		
Guilsby Tho. ....	300		
Graves Joseph .....	250		
Goss Charles .....	171		
Goodall Jno. ....	400		
Geddes .....	476		
Gill Jno. ....	100		
Green Tho. ....	50		
Gregory Nicho. ....	50		
Green Wm. ....	100		
Ginnings Phill. ....	400		
Gibson Gibey .....	150		
Goodman John .....	275		
Goodwin Robert .....	150		
Grice Aristotle .....	700		
Greene Tho. ....	500		
	5882		
H			
Hudson Wm. ....	50		
Herd Leph. ....	100		
Hadley Dyonitia .....	100		
Hall Jno. ....	50		
Harvey George .....	1425		
Howard Jno. ....	25		
Hughes Geo. ....	250		
Harfield Mich. ....	50		
Hudson George .....	100		
Hudson Leonard .....	170		
Hood Jno. ....	250		
Harris Wm. ....	140		
Hamner Nicho. ....	500		
Henley Leonard .....	360		
Hooker Edward .....	1067		
Higgins Jno. ....	75		
Henley Jno. ....	100		
Holiday Tho. ....	250		
Hitchcock John .....	100		
Holeman James .....	150		

## APPENDIX

213

Hubert Matt .....	1834
Handcock Robt. ....	300
Haley James .....	310
Hook Mick .....	260
Hill Tho. ....	310
Hatfield Richard .....	100
Hilliard Jerimiah .....	225
Hilliard John .....	200
Hopkins John .....	120
Hunt Wm. ....	1300
Hix John .....	115
Harrison Wm. ....	150
Hawkins John .....	200
Hix Joseph .....	100
Harrison Benj. Jun .....	100
	10936

## J

Inch Jno. ....	30
Jone Fred .....	300
Inglis Mingo .....	1300
Jenings Edmund Esq. ....	200
Jacuelin Edward .....	400
Jeffrys Tho. ....	60
Jackson Elizabeth .....	200
Jackson Richard .....	150
Jeffrys Matt. ....	100
Johnson Antho. ....	100
Jones Wm. ....	50
Johnson Jno. ....	260
Jones Wm. ....	150
Jordan John .....	1000
	4265

## K

Knowstarp .....	150
L	
Lawrence Richard .....	250
Ludwell Phil Esq. ....	6626
Lattoon John .....	75
Lund Thomas .....	100
Lillingstone Benj. ....	100
Lidie Robt. ....	500
Loftin Comeles .....	200
Lightfoot Phil .....	1650
Lightfoot Jno. Esq. ....	250
Love Jno. ....	100
Loftin Comeles Jun .....	200
Liney Wm. ....	55
	10106

M	
Mookins Roger .....	160
Macklin Wm .....	300
Marston Wm .....	150
Morris Edward Jun .....	100
Manningaren .....	150
Marston Tho .....	1000
Martin Richard .....	150
Maples Tho .....	300
Muttlow Jno .....	170
Morris James .....	800
Moris David .....	170
Myers Wm Jun .....	100
Mountfort Tho .....	600
Morris John .....	195
Marble Geo .....	135
Mallard Poynes .....	100
Merryman James .....	300
Morecock Tho .....	700
Meekings Tho .....	175
Marraw Dennis .....	30
Major John .....	100
	5885

## N

N	
Norrell Hugh .....	328
Nicholson Jno .....	144
Nicholls Henry .....	100
Nailer Wm .....	300
O'Mooney Mary .....	126
	998

## P

P	
Prince George .....	50
Page John .....	1700
Page Mary .....	900
Pigot Benj. ....	90
Pall Wm .....	450
Parker Tho .....	1650
Peper Stephen .....	100
Phillips Jno .....	300
Pattison Alex .....	100
Perkins Charles .....	320
Philips Edward .....	100
Philips Wm .....	300
Pearman Wm .....	270
Pearman Jno .....	200
Pendexter Tho .....	550
Parish Tho .....	100
Pattisson Tho .....	200

## APPENDIX

Parke Daniell Esq .....	1800	V
Pattison Catherine .....	150	
	9330	
R		
Rhodes Randall .....	50	
Ryder Mary .....	350	
Rhodes Francis .....	100	
Rovell Jno .....	50	
Revis Wm. .....	150	
Russell Samuell .....	350	
	1050	
S		
Stafford Mary .....	210	
Sanders Jno. ....	50	
Sewell Jno. ....	75	
Sprattley Jno. ....	350	
Smith Christo. ....	450	
Short Jno. ....	90	
Smallpage Robt. ....	190	
Santo Robt. ....	100	
Smith Jno. ....	114	
Slade Wm. ....	80	
Soane Henry .....	750	
Sykes Barnard .....	1012	
Selvey Jacob .....	50	
Sharp Jno. ....	800	
Shaley Jno. ....	150	
Simes Wm. ....	650	
Sorrell Mary .....	500	
Sherman Elizb. ....	500	
	6121	
T		
Tinsley Edward .....	100	
Tinsley Richard .....	100	
Tomson James .....	100	
Thackson John .....	289	
Tyery Wm. ....	1590	
Thurston John .....	500	
Thomas Wm. ....	150	
Tyler Henry .....	730	
Tullett John .....	625	
Thomas Hanah .....	100	
Thomson Henry .....	150	
Twine Tho. ....	100	
Thomas Jno. ....	250	
	4784	
V		
Vaughn Henry .....	1900	
Udall Matthew .....	50	
Verney Wm. ....	50	
Vaiding Isaac .....	300	
	2300	
W		
Weathers Tho. ....	130	
Wood Richard .....	130	
Whitaker Wm. ....	320	
Ward Tho. ....	100	
Weldon Sarah .....	100	
Whaley Mary .....	200	
Winter Timo. ....	250	
Wilkins Samll. ....	170	
Wright Samll. ....	100	
Winter Wm. ....	100	
Williams Matt. ....	75	
Walker Alex. ....	500	
Williamson John .....	120	
Walker David .....	150	
Walker Alex. Jun. ....	2025	
Warberton Tho. ....	190	
Weldey Geo. ....	317	
Wragg Tho. ....	500	
Wooton Jno. ....	150	
Willson Jno. ....	140	
Wilkins Tho. ....	600	
Wood Edward .....	300	
Wood Tho. ....	200	
Walker David .....	100	
Ward Robt. ....	800	
Wright Mary .....	175	
Woodward Lanslett .....	650	
Woodward John .....	650	
Woodward Geo. ....	350	
Woodward Samll. ....	350	
Ward Henry .....	150	
Ward Edward .....	150	
	10662	
Y		
Young Robt. ....	350	
Young Thomas .....	350	
	700	
	114780	

Benj. Shottwater of York County .....	.	the Qt. Rts. according to his Ex.cy odrs in Council
Tho. Sorrell .....	300	6000
Mary Nosham at the Blackwater .....	300	<hr/>
	168	108780
	<hr/>	<hr/>
	768	108780
Henry Soane Junr. Sher.		108780 acres at 24 tob per
The Totall of the Acres in James City County	114780	100 is ..... 26107 tob
Discovered of this for which the Shreiff is to be allowed		<hr/>
		Whereof pd in Aronoco at
		6 per Ct ..... 4000
		12.0.0
		In Sweet Scented at 3s " 4d
		per Ct. ..... 22107
		92.2.3
		104.2.3

## New Kent County Rent Roll

A Rent Roll of the Lands held of her Maj<sup>tie</sup> in the Parish of St. Peters  
and St. Pauls. Anno 1704.

Alford John .....	240	Bradbury Geo .....	100
Allen Richard .....	550	Brothers Jno .....	200
Alex Abraham .....	100	Bayley Jno .....	80
Allen Robt. .....	100	Beck Wm Mr. ....	200
Austin .....	245	Butts Alice .....	150
Austin James .....	700	Burnell Mary Mrs. ....	2750
Amos Fran .....	100	Bassett Wm. ....	550
Ashcroft Tho .....	180	Ball David .....	200
Aldridge Jno .....	250	Baughan Jno Junr .....	300
Atkinson Jno .....	300	Bassett Tho .....	350
Anthony Mark .....	190	Blackburn Rowland .....	700
Anderson Jno .....	100	Baker Christo .....	100
Anderson Robt. ....	900	Beer Peter .....	100
Arise Margt .....	200	Brooks Richd .....	85
Austin Rich .....	50	Burnell Edwd .....	200
Anderson Robt. ....	700	Brown Jno .....	100
Anderson David .....	300	Bullock Richd .....	450
Anderson Rich .....	200	Blackwell James Junr .....	200
Allen Reynold .....	205	Brooks Robt .....	45
Allvis George .....	325	Bulkley Benj .....	200
Aron Josiah .....	200	Blackwell .....	950
Amos Nocho .....	50	Baughan Jno .....	100
Allen Daniell .....	250	Baughan Joseph .....	100
Allen Samll .....	150	Bostock Jno .....	100
Anderson John .....	100	Bostock Wm .....	80
Ashley Charles .....	100	Bumpus Robt. ....	100
	<hr/>	Burwell Lewis .....	200
	6785	Bryan Charles .....	100
		Bullock Edwd .....	450
		Blalock Jno .....	492
		Baker Jno .....	130
		Bearne Henry .....	50

B

Bourn Wm .....	140
Bray Sarah .....	790

## APPENDIX

Buhly Jno .....	225	Chandler Wm. ....	300
Bow Henry .....	200	Chandler Francis .....	150
Bradley Tho .....	255	Cordey Tho. ....	150
Barker Cha .....	100	Currell Andrew .....	30
Bugg Samll .....	60	Croome Joell .....	600
Baskett Wm. Esq. ....	1250	Crutchfield Peter .....	400
Beck Wm. ....	433	Chesley Wm. ....	500
Beare Joseph .....	150	Crutchfield Junr .....	400
Barrett Christo .....	60	Carlton Wm. ....	140
Baughtwright Jno .....	250	Chambers George .....	100
Bad Samll .....	150	Cox Wm. ....	350
Banks Andrew .....	50		
Baker Richd .....	80		
Bowles John .....	500		
Bunch John .....	100		
Burnett Jno .....	150	D	
Barnhowes Richd .....	1600	Dolerd Wm .....	50
Barbar Tho .....	500	Dennett John .....	350
Burkett Tho .....	41	Durham James .....	100
Bates Edwd .....	50	Dumas Jerimiah .....	250
Breeding John .....	300	Deprest Robt .....	350
Brewer Mary .....	100	Dodd John .....	300
Bassett Wm. Esq. ....	4100	Dabony James .....	320
Bradingham Robt. ....	150	Davis Elizar .....	375
Baxter James .....	90	Duke Henry Esq. ....	325
	21786	Dib dall Jno .....	800
		Darnell Rachell .....	100
		Duke Henry Esq. ....	170
		Davis John .....	80
		Davenport Mest .....	125
		Daniell John .....	150
		E	
Cotrell Richd .....	200	Eperson John .....	120
Clarkson David .....	200	Elmore Tho .....	300
Crump Stephen .....	60	Elmore Tho Junr .....	100
Crump Wm. ....	330	Ellicon Garratt Robt .....	520
Clopton Wm. ....	454	England Wm. ....	490
Chandler Robt. ....	160	Elderkin John .....	300
Crump Richd. ....	60	Elmore Peter .....	100
Cambo Richd. ....	80	English Mungo .....	500
Crawford David Junr .....	400	Ellis Wm. ....	100
Crawford David Mr. ....	300		
Chambers Edwd .....	235		
Clerk Edwd .....	282		
Collett Tho .....	100		
Clerk Christo .....	300		
Cocker Wm. ....	1000		
Case Hugh .....	100		
Carley Richd. ....	80		
Chiles Henry .....	700		
Cook Abraham .....	200		
Crump Elizb .....	80		
Colum Richd. ....	130		
Crump James .....	150		
Crump Robt. ....	150		
Clough Capt. ....	80		
		F	
		Finch Edwd .....	300
		Foster Joseph .....	800
		Forgeson Wm. ....	507
		Fleming Charles .....	920
		Francis Tho .....	150
		Freeman Wm. ....	200

## APPENDIX

217

Fenton Widdo .....	270	Hatfield Wm .....	318
Feare Edmd .....	200	Harris Wm .....	125
Fisher Wm. ....	100	Harris Benj .....	100
	3447	Horkeey John .....	800
		Hairy John .....	280
		Haiselwood Jno .....	200
		Haiselwood Tho .....	150
		Hockiday Wm .....	300
		Holdcroft Henry .....	95
		Hogg Mary .....	140
		Harmon Wm .....	350
		Hogg Jno. Junr .....	260
		Harris Wm .....	100
		Hopkins Wm .....	200
		Howes Job .....	300
		Hight John .....	100
		Hankins Charles .....	340
		Harris Wm .....	150
		Harris Robt .....	75
		Handey Wm .....	150
		Hogg Wm .....	200
		Haselwood Richd .....	100
		Harlow Tho .....	230
		Hutton Geo .....	150
			11312
			J
		Jackson Tho .....	500
		Izard Fran .....	1233
		Jarratt Robt .....	1600
		Johnson Mich .....	40
		Jones John .....	100
		Johnson Wm .....	265
		Jones Jane .....	200
		Johnson John .....	100
		Johnson Edwd .....	150
		Jennings Robt .....	100
		Jones Fredirick .....	500
		Johnes John .....	100
		Jeeves Tho .....	100
		Jones Francis .....	200
		Jones John .....	100
		Jones Evan .....	500
			5838
			K
		King Elizb .....	300
		Kembro Jno .....	540
		Kembro Jno Junr .....	150
		Keeling Geo .....	1500
			2490

## APPENDIX

L		
Lightfoot John Esq.	3600	Madox John .....
Littlepage Richd	2160	Martin Wm .....
Losplah Peter	100	Martin James .....
Lestrangle Tho	200	Moss James .....
Liddall Geo	100	Moon Tho .....
Lawson Nicho	200	McKing Alexander .....
Levermore Phill	1000	McKoy Jno .....
Lewis John Esq	2600	Merridith Geo .....
Lawson John	50	Melton Richd .....
Lewis John	375	Morreigh John .....
Lovell Geo	920	Merfield John .....
Lovell Charles	250	Mills Nicho .....
Leak Wm	280	Mask Jno .....
Logwod Tho	100	Medlock John .....
Lacey Wm	500	Moor Edwd .....
Lacey Tho	100	McKgene Wm .....
Lacey Emanuell	180	Merriweather Nicho .....
Luke Jno	150	Mage Peter .....
Lochester Robt	80	Mitchell Wm .....
Lewis Tho	115	Marr Geo .....
Lee Edwd	120	Moor Anne .....
Lochester Edwd	80	Mutray Tho .....
Law James	100	Mirideth James .....
Laton Reubin	100	Mohan Warwick .....
Linsey Joseph	1150	Muttlow James .....
Linsey Wm	50	Morgan Matthew .....
Lane Tho	100	Morris John .....
	14760	Markham Tho .....
		Moxon Wm .....
		Mackony Elizb .....
		Meacon Gideon .....
M		16149½
Millington Wm Junr	450	
Mitchell Stephen Junr	75	
Millington Wm	200	
Moss Samll	200	N
Mitchell Tho	300	Nucholl James .....
Meanley Wm	100	Neaves James .....
Minis Tho	200	Nonia Richd .....
Mitchell Stephen	200	Norris Wm .....
Moor Pelham	125	
Martin Tho	100	
Martin Martin	150	
Morris Robt	245	O
Moss Tho	430	Osling John .....
Morgan Edwd	50	Otey John .....
Moon Stephen	70	Oudton Matt .....
Major Wm	456	
Murroho, Jno	100	
Moor Jno	250	
Masey Tho	300	P
Martin John	400	Page John Junr .....
Masey Peter	100	Pendexter Geo .....
		Pattison David .....
		300

Park Jno Junr .....	300	Smith Nathl .....	82
Park John .....	200	Sanders Wm .....	40
Pease John .....	100	Spear Robt .....	450
Philip Geo .....	100	Sanders James .....	60
Penix Edwd .....	200	Scott John .....	300
Plantine Peter .....	240	Scrugg Richd .....	100
Pendexter Tho .....	1000	Strange Alexander .....	450
Pyraul James .....	150	Smith Wm .....	110
Pullam Wm .....	575	Scrugg Jno .....	50
Purdy Nicho .....	200	Snead Tho .....	200
Page Mary Madm .....	3450	Sunter Stephen .....	478
Perkins John .....	120	Symons Josiah .....	100
Paite Jerim .....	220	Sanders John .....	130
Pasley Robt .....	300	Stephens Wm .....	100
Perkins Wm .....	305	Stanley Tho .....	150
Pait John .....	1500	Sandidge Jno .....	100
Petever Tho .....	100	Sprattin Andrew .....	654
Pittlader Wm .....	147	Snead John .....	75
Pickley Tho .....	281	Smith James .....	80
Pittlader Tho .....	295	Sexton Wm .....	80
Petty Stephen .....	200	Sims Jno .....	1000
Porter John .....	100	Smith Roger .....	300
Petty John .....	2190	Sherritt Henry .....	100
Park Coll .....	7000	Salmon Thomas .....	50
Purdy John .....	100	Sanders Tho .....	25
	21573	Symons George .....	125
R		Stamp Ralph .....	625
Raglin Evan .....	300	Stanop Capt .....	1024
Raglin Evan Junr .....	100	Stanup Richd .....	325
Raglin Tho .....	100	Shears Paul .....	200
Ross Wm .....	150	Stepping Tho .....	350
Richardson Henry .....	300	Slater James .....	700
Raymond James .....	80		9813
Reynold Tho .....	255	T	
Reyley Jno .....	100	Tony Alexandr .....	170
Reynolds Jonah .....	50	Tovis Edmd .....	100
Rhoads Charles .....	175	Turner Henry .....	250
Reynolds Samll .....	820	Turner Wm .....	250
Rice Tho .....	300	Turner Geo .....	400
Redwood John .....	1078	Thorp Tho .....	200
Rule Widdo .....	50	Thurmond Richd .....	131½
Richardson Richard .....	890	Tucker Tho .....	700
Russell John .....	550	Turner James .....	50
Richardson John .....	1450	Thompson James .....	100
Richard Eman .....	1250	Tully Wm .....	200
Round Free Wm .....	100	Turner Geo Junr .....	200
Randolph Widdo .....	100	Tate James .....	160
	8928	Town Elizb .....	100
S		Thomasses Orphans .....	500
Styles John .....	200	Tinsley Cournelius .....	220
		Tyler .....	100

## APPENDIX

Tinsley Tho .....	150	Winstone Antho .....	310
Tirrell Wm .....	400	Winstone Isaac .....	850
Taylor Tho .....	25	Woody James .....	130
Tinsley Jno .....	130	Winstone Sarah .....	275
Tapp Jno .....	110	Watson Theophilus .....	325
Tyrrey James .....	150	Woodson Jno .....	600
Tyrrey Alexandr .....	210	Walton Edwd .....	450
Thompson Capt. ....	2600	Wood Walter .....	100
Tyrey Thom .....	190	Watkins Wm .....	50
Taylor Joseph .....	150	Wilkes Joseph .....	250
Taylor Lemuell .....	212	Williams Clerk .....	300
Taylor Thomas .....	350	Willis Stephen .....	500
Twitty Thomas .....	200	Williams Tho .....	100
	8708½	Worrin Robt .....	300

## V

Upsherd Jon .....	60	Woodull James .....	200
Vaughan Wm .....	300	Walker Capt .....	400
Via Amer.. ....	50	Wilson James .....	60
Venables Abr. ....	100	Wheeler John .....	75
Venables John .....	200	Williams Wm. ....	100
Vaughan John .....	250	White John .....	190
Vaughan Vincent .....	410		
	1370		17292

## W

Wintby Jacob .....	250	Y	
Winfry Charles .....	100	Yeoman John .....	50
Waddill Jno .....	40	Yeoell Judith .....	150
Walker Wm .....	650		200
Walton Edwd .....	150		
Wilson Jno .....	200		
Waddill Wm .....	375		
Warring Peter .....	88		
Wingfield Tho .....	150		
Weaver Sam .....	100	Quit Rents that hath not been paid this 7 year viz.	
Wyatt Alice .....	1300	Richardson Matt .....	200
West Nath .....	6370	Wm Wheeler .....	150
Webb Mary .....	200	Coll Parkes .....	300
Wilmore Jno .....	100		
Webster Joseph .....	80		
West Giles .....	200		
Wharton Tho .....	270		
Willis Fran .....	134	Lands that the Persons lives out of the County viz.	
Waddy Samll .....	150	Coll Lemuel Bathurst .....	800
Willford Charles .....	100	Robt Valkes .....	500
Waid James .....	150	The Heirs of Bray .....	500
White Jno .....	320		
Wood Henry .....	100		
Woody Symon .....	50		
Woody Jno .....	100		
		A .....	6785
		B .....	21786
		C .....	9251
		D .....	3845
		E .....	2530
		F .....	3447
		G .....	7442
		H .....	11312

## APPENDIX

221

J .....	5838	S .....	9813
K .....	2490	T .....	8708½
L .....	14760	V .....	1370
M .....	16149½	W .....	17292
N .....	650	Y .....	200
O .....	630		
P .....	21573		173870
R .....	8298		James Mosse Sheriff

A full & Perfect Rent Roll of all the Land held of her Majtie in Charles  
City County this Present Year 1704 by Patents &c.

	A		
Aliat John .....	100	Epes John .....	500
	B	Ele Samll .....	682
Bradley Joseph .....	200	Evans John .....	800
Baxter John .....	250		2669½
Bishop Robt .....	200		
Bedingfield Theo .....	110		
Botman Harman .....	100	Floyd Geo .....	243
Burton Henry .....	100	Fowler Richd .....	150
Burwell Lewis .....	8000	Flowers Samll .....	200
Brooks Robt .....	150		
Blanks Richard Senr .....	250		593
Blanks Richd Junr .....	125		
Blanks Tho .....	125		
Bradford Richd .....	1397	Gunn James .....	250
Brown Marmaduke .....	100	Grosse Edwd .....	100
Bray David .....	230		
	I1337		350
	C		
Cole Robt .....	80	Hamlin Jno .....	143½
Codell Richd .....	100	Hill Edwd .....	2100
Clark Edwd .....	962¼	Haynes Nicho .....	125
Clark Daniell .....	250	Harwood John .....	100
Clark Joseph .....	230	Howood James .....	200
Christian Tho .....	1273	Hattle Shard .....	112
Cock Edwd .....	350	Harwood Joseph .....	659
Cock Richd .....	975	Harwood Samll .....	350
	3258	Harwood Robt .....	312½
	D	Hunt Wm .....	3130
Davis Thomas .....	200	Hunt John .....	1500
Davis Richd .....	118	Harmon Elizb .....	479
	318	Hyde Wm .....	120
	E	Hamlin Stephen .....	80
Edwards John .....	287½	Hamlin Tho .....	264
Epes Littlebury .....	400		
	J		16015
	Irby Wm .....	103	
	Javox James .....	100	

## APPENDIX

Jordin Edwd .....	100
Justis Justinian .....	200
	503
L	
Lowlin Danll .....	600
Lawrence James .....	100
	700
M	
Manders James .....	100
Minge James .....	1086
Mountford Jeffry .....	100
Marvell Tho .....	1238
Moodie Samll .....	82
Muschamp John .....	80
	2686
N	
New Edwd .....	100
New Robt .....	300
	400
O	
Owen Wm .....	100
Owen David .....	100
	200
P	
Parker Tho .....	1667
Parish Wm .....	100
Parish Charles .....	100
Parker James .....	160
Parish Edwd .....	100
Parish John .....	100
	2227
R	
Roach Jno Senr .....	630
Renthall Joseph .....	270
Russell Samll .....	253
Roper John .....	220
Royall Joseph .....	262
	1635

S	
Smith Obidiah .....	100
Sampson Widdo .....	211
Stith Drewry .....	1240
Stith John .....	1395
Stockes John .....	476
Stockes Silvanus Senr .....	250
Stockes Silvanus Junr .....	550
Speares Geo .....	225
	4447
T	
Tanner Tho .....	2000
Tarendine John .....	150
Turner Edwd .....	195
Trotman Anne .....	120
	2465
V	
Vernon Walter .....	240
W	
Wyatt Widdo .....	800
Woodam Tho .....	100
Waren John .....	54
	954
A	
B	
C	
D	
E	
F	
G	
H	
J	
L	
M	
N	
O	
P	
R	
S	
T	
V	
W	
	2227
	1635
	4447
	2465
	240
	954
	52059½

## APPENDIX

223

An account of what Land that  
I cannot get the Quit Rents  
the Persons living out of the  
County

Josep Parish at Kiquotan... 100

Richd Smith James City Cty	350
Danll Hayley .....	200
Wm Lagg Henrico Cty ....	100

750

Tho Parker Sherif

## The Quit Rent Roll of King William County

Armsby John .....	200	Coates Wm .....	50
Alvey Robt .....	400	Douglas Wm .....	200
Andrew Wm .....	100	Davis Lewis .....	200
Abbott Robt .....	100	Davis Wm .....	200
Arnold Anthony .....	100	Downer John .....	300
Arnold Benj .....	1000	Downes Elias .....	300
Alcock John .....	190	Davenport Davis .....	200
Adam James .....	400	Dorrell Sampson Qr .....	5000
Anderson Wm Capt .....	150	Davenport Martin .....	100
Burwell Majr .....	4700	Davis Robert .....	200
Bunch Paul .....	150	Dickason Wm .....	100
Baker John .....	250	Dickason Thomas .....	100
Burges Edwd .....	150	Dillon Henry .....	150
Buttris Robt .....	400	Dabney James .....	200
Bibb Benj .....	100	Dabney George .....	290
Browne Joseph .....	270	Dabney Benj .....	200
Bell Edwds .....	580	Davis John .....	200
Burch Henry .....	200	Elly Richd .....	100
Burrel Suprian .....	350	Egny Elizb .....	100
Baker Tho .....	100	Elliot Thomas .....	480
Bobo Elizb .....	200	Edward James .....	350
Bird Wm Maj Qr .....	1200	Elliott James .....	1700
Burrus John .....	60	Fox John Capt. ....	600
Butler Thomas .....	150	Fox Henry .....	2000
Burrus Thomas .....	60	Finton Francis .....	100
Bassett Coll Qr .....	1550	Fuller Anthony .....	150
Bray James Qr .....	1400	Foord John Junr .....	300
Browne Abraham .....	250	Foord Wm .....	800
Brightwell Elizb .....	300	Fullalove Thomas .....	100
Bickley Joseph .....	150	Fleming Charles Qr .....	1700
Claibourne Wm Coll .....	3000	Graves John Qr .....	100
Claibourne Tho Capt .....	1000	Garratt Thomas .....	200
Claibourne John .....	50	Geeres Thomas .....	100
Coakes Robert .....	100	Green John .....	100
Cradock Samll .....	600	Gravatt Henry .....	150
Cockram Wm .....	200	Goodin Majr Qr .....	200
Cockram Joseph .....	600	Glover Wm .....	100
Celar John .....	100	Herriott George .....	200
Chadwick Wm .....	150	Hollins John .....	200
Cathern John .....	180	Higgason John .....	350
Carr Thomas .....	500	Hoderbee Wm .....	100
Chiles Henry Qr .....	700	Holliday Wm .....	100
Craushaw Thomas .....	150	Hayfield Wm .....	100
Clark Margarett .....	100	Hampton John .....	50

## APPENDIX

Huckstep Edwd .....	150	Pynes Nathaniell .....	1400
Hurt Wm Junr .....	90	Pee Thomas .....	400
Hurt Wm Senr .....	250	Purlevant Arthur .....	100
Hurt John .....	500	Powers David .....	200
Hendrick Hans .....	700	Pollard Wm Qr .....	500
Handcock Thomas .....	200	Pemberton Geo .....	180
Hayden John .....	150	Page John Qr .....	1000
Hobday Edwd .....	150	Pickrell Gabriell .....	100
Hill Thomas .....	150	Parks Coll Qr .....	4500
Hutchinson Wm .....	600	Quarles John .....	100
Hill Francis .....	300	Reynolds Wm .....	100
Hill Gabriell .....	250	Robert Maurice .....	200
Hill Edwd Coll Qr .....	3000	Randall John .....	100
Hayle Joseph .....	200	Ray James .....	100
Johns Jane .....	240	Rhodes Nicholas .....	150
Johnson Wm .....	300	Sandlan Nicholas .....	700
Johnson Coll Qr .....	600	Strutton Thomas .....	150
Johns Wm .....	100	Streett Wm .....	350
Isabell Wm .....	150	Shilling George .....	300
James Jonathan .....	300	Satterwhite Charles .....	150
Inge Vincent .....	100	Slaughter Geo .....	100
Jones Frederick Qr .....	2850	Slaughter Martin .....	130
Jenings Coll Qr .....	4000	Stark John .....	500
King Robert Qr .....	300	Sanders Jushua .....	100
Kettlerise Symon .....	200	See Mathew .....	200
Lee John .....	20	Sellers Jacob .....	350
Lypscomb Ambrose .....	600	Spruse Jeremy .....	150
Lasy Wm .....	100	Smith Edmd .....	150
Lypscomb Wm .....	300	Spencer Thomas .....	600
Littlepage Richd Capt Qr .....	2600	Slaughter John .....	90
Lypscomb John .....	200	Smith Christo Qr .....	800
Mallory Thomas .....	150	Slaughter Henry .....	100
Mallory Roger .....	100	Toms Wm .....	150
Miles Daniell .....	350	Towler Matthew .....	150
Mr Gehee Thomas .....	250	Terry Thomas .....	300
Marr John .....	200	Terry Stephen .....	330
Morris Wm .....	440	Tomason Thomas .....	150
Maybank Wm .....	100	Terry James .....	400
Mr Donnell John .....	150	Traneer John .....	100
Maddison Henry .....	650	Vickrey Henry .....	450
Merriweather Nicho Qr .....	600	West John Coll .....	1800
Mullen Matthew .....	150	Winfree Henry .....	300
Madison John Qr .....	300	West Tho Capt .....	1000
Norment Joseph .....	800	Whitworth John .....	200
Norment Samll .....	100	Whitlock John .....	200
Noyce Wm .....	650	Willeroy Abraham .....	550
Napier Robert .....	100	Williams Phillip .....	100
Owens Hugh .....	300	Williams Griffith .....	240
Oustin John .....	350	Wood Thomas .....	300
Oakes John .....	350	Whitehead John .....	100
Oliver John .....	140	Woolsey Jacob .....	130
Palmer Martin .....	1200	Williams John .....	150
Peek John .....	100	Williams Samll .....	600

## APPENDIX

225

Wright Thomas .....	150	Wm Stanard M.S. ....	1000
Whitbee Robert .....	800	James Wood K.Q. ....	500
West Nathaniel Capt .....	2000	Zachary Lewis K.Q. ....	450
Waller John Majr .....	800	Peter Kemp G.C. ....	600
Willis Wm .....	250	Wm Beck N.K. ....	1600
Wheelis Joseph .....	130	Tho. Hickman K.Q. ....	550
Wormley Madam Qr .....	3000	Benj Clement G.C. ....	600
Winston William .....	170	David Bray J.C.C. ....	1000
Whitehead Phillip .....	3000	Job House N.K. ....	2000
Yancey Charles .....	100	Harry Beverley M.S. ....	600
Yarborough John .....	150	Chillian White G.C. ....	300
Yarborough Richard .....	300		

100950

A True Account of the Lands in King & Queen County as it was taken by Robt. Bird Sheriff in the year 1704.

## A

Alford John .....	200
Austin Danll .....	80
Asque John .....	320
Adams Johns .....	200
Arnold Edwd .....	150
Allin Thomas .....	100
Adkinson John .....	250
Austin Thomas .....	100
Adamson David .....	100
Anderson Richd .....	650
Allcock Dorothy .....	150
	2300

## B

Baker Wm .....	350
Beverley Robt. Qr. ....	3000
Bennett Alexander .....	200
Breeding Geo .....	200
Bennett Wm .....	150
Bowles Robt .....	100
Bennett Sawyer .....	150
Baylor John .....	3000
Bell Roger .....	150
Burford Wm .....	150
Bray John .....	230
Blake Wm .....	290
Boisseau James Quart .....	900
Blake Wm Junr .....	210
Brown Lancelet .....	385
Burch Jno .....	100
Burch Wm .....	100
Brown Tho. Blakes Land .....	300
Bridgeforth James .....	355

Bagby Robt .....	550
Banks Wm .....	1079
Bullock John .....	200
Bird Wm .....	572
Broach Jno .....	1200
Braxton Geo .....	2825
Blanchet John .....	125
Bowker Ralph .....	330
Bine Edmd .....	111
Barber James .....	750
Burgess Wm .....	100
Bond Jno .....	100
Breemer John .....	1100
Bland Henry .....	150
Breemer John Junr .....	200
Bowden Tho. ....	150
Barton Andrew .....	150
Barlow Henry .....	200
Baskett John .....	150
Batterton Tho. ....	100
Baker James .....	322
Bill Robt. ....	150
Bucus Reynold .....	150
Bourne George .....	200
Bird Robt. ....	1324

22535

## C

Cane Jno .....	300
Chessum Alexandr .....	150
Cook Benjamin .....	200
Cook Thomas Junr .....	50
Cook Thomas Senr .....	100
Cook Jno .....	50
Cleyton John .....	400

## APPENDIX

Chapman Mary .....	200	Dillard Thomas .....	170
Cleyton Jeremy .....	325	Davis Richd .....	250
Crane Wm .....	120	Dillard Geo .....	325
Camp Thomas .....	250	Duglas James .....	275
Carleton Christo .....	200	Dayley Owen .....	180
Carleton Jno. ....	300		
Carter Timo. ....	350		
Coleman Tho. ....	300		
Coleman Daniell .....	470	E	
Cleyton Susannah Widdo ..	700	Eachols John .....	220
Collier Robt. ....	100	Ellis John .....	400
Crane Wm. ....	300	Eastham George .....	300
Crane Tho. ....	320	Ewbank Wm .....	350
Chapman John .....	200	Eastham Edwd Junr .....	800
Caughlane James .....	100	Edwds John .....	100
Cotton Catherine .....	50	Eastham Edwd .....	100
Collier Charles .....	450	Estes Abraham .....	200
Collier John .....	400	Eyes Cornelius .....	100
Collins Wm. ....	350	Emory Ralph .....	100
Cammell Alexandr. ....	200	Ellis Timothy .....	350
Chin Hugh .....	100		
Conner Timo. ....	1410		
Collins James Yard Qr .....	300	F	
Corbin Gowin .....	2000	Forsigh Thomas .....	150
Crisp Tobias .....	100	Farquson James .....	300
Carters Qr .....	300	Flipp John .....	80
Carlton Tho. ....	200	Farish Robt .....	1400
Carlton Anne .....	300	Fielding Henry .....	1000
Clough George Qr .....	390	Farmer John .....	50
	12235	Fothergill Richd .....	675
Clerk and Cordell both in Gloucester .....	1000	Fortcon Charles .....	400
		Forgett Charles .....	150
		Robt Fothergill .....	150
D			
Widdo Durrat .....	200	Farmer John not paid for..	200
Day Alexander Maj. Beverley Qr .....	300	Fox Margarett not pd for..	100
Doe Wm. ....	300		
Dilliard Nicho. ....	150	G	
Dilliard Edwd. ....	150	Gadberry Edwd .....	100
Dimmock Tho. ....	150	Griffin Edwd .....	100
Dismukes Wm. ....	200	George Richd .....	100
Duett Charles .....	900	Griffin David .....	100
Didlake James .....	200	Graves Robt .....	150
Durham John .....	100	Graves Jno .....	150
Dunkley John .....	380	Gardner Ringing .....	200
Duson Tho. ....	448	Gray Joseph .....	200
Davis Nathll. ....	300	Gilby John .....	300
Deshazo Peter .....	450	Gray Samll .....	40
Davis Jno .....	90	Gresham Jno .....	200
Davis Edwd .....	100	Gresham Edwd .....	175

## APPENDIX

227

Garrett Danll .....	200	Holt Joseph lives in
Gamble Tho. Majors Land	450	Maryland .....
Gresham Tho .....	225	Mayward Tho in Gloucester..
Graves Jno .....	150	
Guttery Jno .....	230	J
Greogory Frances Widdo ..	700	Jones Tho .....
Gough Alice Widdo .....	800	Jones Robt .....
Griggs Francis .....	250	Jeffrys Richd .....
Garrett John .....	330	Jones Robt Junr .....
Garrett Humphrey .....	200	Johnson James .....
Gibson Widdo .....	200	Jones Wm .....
Garrett Robt .....	200	
	6100	
		1917

## H

Hand Thomas .....	150
Hayle John Qr .....	685
Honey James .....	200
Holloway Wm .....	100
Herndon James .....	100
Hoomos George .....	725
Hodges Thomas .....	250
Hayle Joseph .....	250
Hayes John .....	100
Haynes Wm .....	494
Holcomb Wm Bradfords Land .....	700
Henderson John Thackers Land .....	200
Hodgson Widdo .....	200
Henderson Widdo .....	300
Henderson Wm .....	162
Housburrough Morris, Harts Land .....	200
Hesterley John .....	200
Hill John .....	200
Hordon Wm .....	70
Harris Wm .....	250
Hart Tho .....	200
Hockley Robt .....	100
Howard Peter .....	300
Hardgrove Wm .....	100
Herring Arthur .....	50
Hickman Thomas .....	700
Hunt Wm .....	312
Hobs Wm .....	250
Hicks Richd .....	250
Howden Wm .....	100
Howerton Thomas .....	300

8098

Holt Joseph lives in	
Maryland .....	321
Mayward Tho in Gloucester..	600

## J

Jones Tho .....	150
Jones Robt .....	200
Jeffrys Richd .....	337
Jones Robt Junr .....	130
Johnson James .....	200
Jones Wm .....	900

1917

## K

King John .....	150
Kallander Timo .....	100
Kink Anne .....	275
King Edwd .....	200
Knowles Dorothy Qr .....	150
King Robt .....	100
Kenniff Danby .....	100
King Daniell .....	200

1335

## L

Loveing John .....	100
Lyon Peter .....	250
Leigh John .....	6200
Lumpkin Robt .....	400
Lee Wm .....	230
Loob Wm .....	100
Loft Richd .....	320
Lewis Tachary .....	350
Lumpkin Jacob .....	950
Lewis David .....	120
Lewis John Esq .....	10100
Lewis Edwd .....	1400
Lemon Elizb .....	100
Lynes Rebecea .....	405
Levingstone John .....	600
Levingstone Samll .....	100
Lawrence Matthew .....	210
Letts Arthur .....	475
Langford John .....	150
Levingstone Jno Sowels Land .....	750

23310

Leftwich Thomas in Essex 75

## APPENDIX

M		Pollard Robt .....	500
May John .....	300	Pollard Wm .....	100
Musick George .....	100	Phinkett Elizb .....	500
Major Jno .....	250	Pemberton Tho. ....	115
Martin John .....	300	Pickles Tho .....	93
More Austines Qr .....	200	Potters Francis Wido .....	
May Tho .....	300	Neals Land .....	100
Moore Samll .....	100	Parks James .....	200
Maddison Jno .....	500	Purchase Geo Qr .....	580
Morris Wm .....	130	Page Jno .....	100
Martin Elizb .....	400	Pritchett David .....	225
Mackay Sarah .....	177	Pigg Henry .....	61
May John Piggs Land .....	200	Page John Junr .....	300
Major Francis .....	700	Pigg Edwd .....	250
Mansfield Thomas .....	60	Phelps Tho .....	400
Morris Henry .....	100	Pendleton Philip .....	300
Major John .....	400	Pendleto Henry .....	700
Melo Nicho .....	200	Pann John .....	200
Marcartee Daniell .....	200	Paytons quarts .....	500
Morris Wm .....	300	Pigg John .....	100
Mead Wm .....	100	Pamplin Robt .....	150
Matthews Edwd .....	160	Pryor Christo .....	175
Martin Cordelia Wido .....	200	Paulin Elizb .....	175
	5377		7552
N		Pate John in Gloucester.....	1000
Nelson Henry .....	440		
Neal John .....	50	Q	
Nason Joshua .....	200	Quarles James .....	300
Norman Wm .....	300	Quarles Dyley Zacha:	
Norris James .....	100	Lewis Land .....	300
	1090		600
O		R	
Owen Ralph .....	120	Richard Robt .....	300
Ogilvie Wm .....	300	Rings Quarter .....	1000
Orrill Lawrence .....	290	Robinson Daniel .....	100
Orrill Wm .....	500	Roger Giles .....	475
Orsbourn Michaell .....	90	Rice Michaell .....	200
Overstreet James Qr .....	180	Richeson Tho .....	460
ditto at home .....	50	Richeson Elias .....	180
	1530	Read Elizb .....	550
P		Russell Alexandr Wyatts	
Powell Robt .....	500	Land .....	400
Prewitt Wm .....	200	Robinson Robt .....	980
Paine Bernard .....	130	Rowe John .....	100
Pomea Francis .....	100	Richards John .....	914
Philip Charles .....	250	Richards Wm .....	400
Pettitt Thomas .....	548	Richards Oliver .....	250
		Riddle Tho Reads Land .....	700
		Roy Richd .....	1000
		Ryley Elias .....	200

## APPENDIX

229

Rollings Peter .....	150
	8359
John the son of Robt Robinson hold, which nobody pays for .....	750
S	
Sebrill John .....	130
Stone Mary .....	100
Smiths in Bristoll Qr .....	2800
Stone Jno .....	295
Stubbelfield Geo Qr .....	400
Scandland Denis .....	1470
Swinson Richd .....	170
Smith Christo .....	200
Smith Jno Cooper .....	273
Smith Alexander .....	275
Seamour Wm .....	268
Sones Tho .....	150
Shepard Jane .....	100
Southerland Danll .....	200
Shoot Tho .....	100
Shepheard Joseph .....	100
Shea Patrick .....	200
Southerland Danll .....	200
Smith Nicho .....	700
Sanders Nathll .....	200
Smith John Sawyer .....	80
Shuckelford Roger .....	250
Skelton John .....	100
Snell John .....	150
Simpio Charles .....	100
Sawrey John .....	113
Stringer Margt .....	175
Spencer Tho .....	300
Sykes Stephen .....	50
Smith Francis .....	100
Smith Richd .....	150
Sparks John .....	200
Surly Tho .....	100
Stapleton Tho .....	200
Story John .....	3000
Spencer Katherine .....	600
	14599

Shippath Sr Wm Which is not paid for .....	700
Stark Tho of London which is not paid for .....	920
Stubblefield Geo in Gloucester	400
Smith Austin in Gloucester..	4000

	T
Turner Richard .....	200
Todd Thomas Quarts .....	2300
Taylor James .....	4000
Toy Thomas .....	175
Taylor Danll .....	70
Thomas Rowland .....	610
Tunstall Tho .....	550
Todd Richd .....	1050
Towley John .....	200
Trice Jaimes .....	350
Tureman Ignatius .....	100
Turner Thomas .....	267
Thacker C. C. .....	1000
	10872
	U
Vaughan Cornelius .....	500
Vize Nathll .....	100
Uttley John .....	200
	800
	W
Wood James .....	800
Wilkinson John .....	100
Wright Tho .....	300
Watkins Wm .....	137
Wiltshier Joseph .....	60
Watkins Edwd .....	98
Watkins Philip .....	203
White Thomas .....	200
Walker John .....	6000
Wilson Benj Wyats Land..	420
Wyat Richd .....	1843
Walton Thomas .....	200
Wyat John .....	530
Withy Thomas .....	50
Williams Thomas .....	200
Watts Tho .....	235
Ward Samll .....	160
Watkins Benj .....	60
Watkins Tho Junr .....	125
Williams Elizb .....	900
Waldin Samll .....	275
Ware Edwd .....	735
William John .....	125
Ware Vallentine .....	487
Willbourn Tho .....	250
Wildbore Wm .....	100
Ware Nicho .....	718
White Jerimiah .....	200

## APPENDIX

Whorein John .....	200	N .....	1090
Wise Richd quarts .....	209	O .....	1530
Walker John, Johnsons Land .....	1000	P .....	7552
	16920	Q .....	600
Wadlington Paul not paid for being .....	150	R .....	8359
		S .....	14599
		T .....	10872
		U .....	800
		W .....	16920
		Y .....	100
Y			
York Matthew .....	100		
			158522

A .....	2300	Lands returned not paid for	
B .....	22535	C .....	1000
C .....	12235	F .....	300
D .....	5618	H .....	920
E .....	3020	L .....	75
F .....	4355	P .....	1000
G .....	6100	R .....	750
H .....	8098	S .....	6020
J .....	1917	W .....	150
K .....	1335		
L .....	23310		
M .....	5377		10215

## Glocester Rent Roll

## A Rent Roll in Petso Parish

Capt David Alexander ....	1050	James Dudley .....	780
James Amis .....	250	Richd Dudley .....	400
John Acre .....	100	Thomas Dudley .....	200
Wm Armistead .....	430	Thomas Dixon .....	300
Ralph Baker .....	150	Jno Drument .....	80
Martha Brooken .....	600	Samll Fowler .....	150
Thomas Buckner .....	850	Wm Fleming .....	600
Samll Bernard .....	550	Wido Forginson .....	150
Wm Barnard .....	810	Wm Fockner .....	180
Richd Bailey .....	600	Jno Grymes .....	1400
Mary Pooker .....	100	Susannah Grinley .....	200
Thomas Cook .....	350	Darcas Green .....	400
Wm Crymes .....	400	Jno Grout .....	300
Jno Cobson .....	100	Jno Harper .....	100
Robt. Carter .....	1102	Wm Howard .....	300
Wm Collone .....	400	Richd Hubard .....	100
Hannah Camell .....	100	Wm Hasford .....	500
Benj Clements .....	400	Jno Hanes .....	150
Jno Cleake .....	100	Alextnder How .....	120
Wm Cook .....	135	Richd Hill .....	70
Jno Coleman .....	200	Robt Hall .....	100
Jno Day .....	400	Richd Hull .....	250
Jerim Darnell .....	150	Sanll Hawes .....	200
Jno Darnell .....	60	Stephen Johnson .....	150

## APPENDIX

231

Wm Jones for Northington	530	Edward Symons .....	500
Glebe Land .....	127	Nicho Smith .....	280
Jno Kingson .....	400	John Stubs .....	300
Capt Edwd Lewis .....	1000	Thomas Sivepson .....	280
Richd Lee Esq .....	1140	John Smith .....	1300
Nicho Lewis orphen .....	350	Augustin Smith .....	200
Wm Milner .....	900	Augustin Smith Junr .....	500
Richd Minor .....	250	Wm Starbridge .....	159
Edwd Musgrove .....	100	Wm Thornton Senr .....	525
Hayes an orphan .....	60	Wm Thornton Junr .....	800
Elizb Mastin .....	360	Wm Thurston .....	200
Jno Mackwilliams .....	50	Wm Upshaw .....	490
Robt Nettles .....	300	Francis Wisdom .....	150
Wm Norman .....	150	Thomas West .....	112
Isaac Oliver .....	100	Thomas Whiting .....	450
Dorothy Oliver .....	130	George Williams .....	100
Jno Pritchett .....	850	Conquest Wyatt .....	2200
Jno Pate .....	1100	Seth Wickins .....	50
Richd Price .....	600	Walter Waters .....	200
Madm Porteus .....	500	Jane Wothem .....	60
Madm Page .....	550	Robt Yard .....	450
Pobt Porteus .....	892	Robt Hall .....	250
Guy Parish .....	100	Wm Whittmore Desarted ..	150
Wm Roane .....	500	Wm Parsons Orphen .....	100
James Reynolls .....	200	Edwd Stephens .....	70
George Robinson .....	300	John Kelley Orphen .....	150
John Royston .....	570		
Thomas Read .....	2000		41132
Wm Richards in Pamunkey	150	Tho Neale	
Jno Shackelford .....	280		

Glocester Rent Roll  
A Rent Roll of Kingston Parish

Rose Curtis .....	400	Tho Cray .....	200
Robt Peyton .....	680	Hen. Knight .....	240
Richd Perrott .....	35	John Williams .....	50
Henry Preston .....	1500	Richd Beard .....	380
Sarah Green .....	200	Timothy Hundley .....	300
Robt Cully .....	200	Thomas Bedford .....	50
Thomas Hayes .....	140	Jno Floyd .....	250
Andrew Bell .....	128	John Bohannah .....	113½
Humphry Toy .....	1100	Capt Armistead .....	3675
Anne Aldred .....	350	Christopher Dixon .....	300
Dunkin Bahannah .....	113½	Robt Bristow Esqr .....	900
Richd Hunley .....	50	Edwd Gowing .....	100
Capt Gayle .....	164	Tho Ryland .....	272
Math. Gayle Junr .....	250	John Nevill .....	100
James Hundley .....	100	Lawrence Parrott .....	340
John Hundley .....	130	Wm Brooks .....	720
Philip Hundley .....	660	Joseph Bohannah .....	148

## APPENDIX

Wm Hampton .....	348	Benj. Read .....	550
Widdo Green .....	150	Walter Keble .....	550
Capt Dudley .....	650	Joseph Brooks .....	500
Capt. Knowles .....	575	Capt. Gwin .....	1100
Capt. Tho. Todd .....	775	Lindseys Land .....	390
Wm Beard .....	100	Thomas Garwood .....	77
Wm. Tomkins .....	100	John Callie .....	1000
Henry Bolton .....	50	Tho. Miggs .....	100
Wm Eliott .....	1060	Richd Glascock .....	500
Humphrey Tompkins .....	100	Jno Lylley .....	584
Daniel Hunter .....	200	Geo. Billups .....	1200
Thomas Peyton .....	684	Robt. Singleton .....	650
Richd Dudley .....	350	James Foster .....	225
James Ransom Junr .....	310	John Andrews .....	50
Tho. Peters .....	30	Thomas Rice .....	34
Robt. Elliott .....	1247	John Martin .....	200
Mich. Parriett .....	100	Capt. Smith .....	550
Jno. Meachen Junr .....	600	Capt. Sterling .....	1100
Caleb Linsey .....	140	John Diggs .....	1200
Alexandr Ofield .....	23	Wm. Howlett .....	300
Mark Thomas .....	300	Jno. Miller .....	100
Jno. Garnet .....	250	Andrew Ripley .....	40
Wm. Plumer .....	510	Francis Jarvis .....	460
Wm. Brumley .....	750	Wm. Armistead .....	300
Wm. Credle .....	50	John Banister .....	650
Charles Jones .....	225	Tho. Plumer .....	400
Robt. Sadler .....	50	Isaac Plumer .....	200
Edwd Sadler .....	20	James Taylor .....	50
Geo Roberts .....	170	Edwd Borum .....	360
Richd Longest .....	600	Widdo Davis .....	300
Tho. Fliping .....	300	Sam. Singleton .....	300
Charles Watters .....	100	Wm. Morgan Senr .....	50
Wm. Grundy .....	200	Wm. Morgan Junr .....	200
Thomas Kemp .....	200	John Bacon .....	825
Tho. Allaman .....	842	Henry Singleton .....	600
Coll Kemp .....	200	John Edwards .....	534
Ralph Shipley .....	430	Patrick Berry .....	250
George Turner .....	50	Anne Forest .....	500
Coll. James Ransom .....	1400		
Thomas Putman .....	300		
Richd Marchant .....	180	Ambrose Dudley .....	46537
Widdo Sinoh .....	300		
Christopher Rispuie .....	200		

Glocester Rent Roll  
A Rent Roll in Ware Parish

Thomas Poole .....	600	Simon Stubelfield .....	200
Anne Croxson .....	300	Jno. Price .....	600
Thomas Purnell .....	163	Saml. Vadrey .....	400
Nocholas Pamplin .....	210	Samll Dawson .....	350

## APPENDIX

233

Nathan: Burwell .....	600	Giles Cook .....	140
John Dawson .....	780	Wm. Jones .....	120
200	Tho. Collis .....	100	
Robt. Francis .....	400	Philip Smith .....	700
Walter Greswell .....	50	Tho. Cheesman .....	650
Tho. Read .....	400	Geo. More .....	40
James Shackelfield .....	35	James Morris .....	250
Robt. Freeman .....	135	Abraham Iveson Senr. ....	1000
Jno. Marinex .....	100	Robert Bristow Esqr. ....	2050
Isaac Valine .....	100	Anthony Gregory .....	700
Tho. Haywood .....	70	Richd. Bailey .....	800
Hugh Marinex .....	50	Wm. Foulcher .....	100
Leonard Ambrose .....	200	Widdo. Jeffes .....	216
Philip Grady .....	200	Richd. Dudley Junr. ....	300
Capt. Wm. Debnam .....	1250	John Buckner .....	900
James Burton .....	100	Thomas Todd .....	884
Jno. Spinks .....	300	John and Peter Waterfield..	143
Wm. Hurst .....	200	Henry Whiting .....	800
Sarah More .....	67	Madm. Whiting .....	950
John Ray .....	100	Jno. Goodson .....	150
Robt. Pryor .....	300	Wm. Morris .....	350
Christo. Greenaway .....	270	Mary Lassells .....	200
Capt. Throgmorton .....	500	Peter Ransone .....	220
James Clark .....	250	Charles Waters .....	200
Philip Cooper .....	200	Dorothy Kertch .....	220
Jno. Kindrick .....	100	Dorothy Boswell .....	1600
Samll. Simons .....	120	Richd. Cretendon .....	280
Wm. Radford .....	200	Elizb. Anniers .....	250
John Robins .....	900	Elizb. Snelling .....	250
Alice Bates .....	200	Joseph Boswell .....	230
Jno. Easter .....	350	John Bullard .....	100
James Davison .....	100	Anthony Elliot .....	100
Robt. Morrin .....	200	Wm. Armistead .....	100
Anne Bray .....	100	Peter Kemp .....	650
Grace Easter .....	200	Majr. Peter Beverley .....	800
Sampson Dorrell .....	300	Ditto per Tillids Lands .....	150
Capt. Francis Willis .....	3000	Dudley Jolley .....	100
Thomas Powell .....	460	Robt. Couch .....	100
Wm. Holland .....	300		
Capt. Cook .....	1500		31603

Glocester Rent Roll  
A Rent Roll of Abbington Parish

Mr. Guy Smith .....	30	Henry Stevens .....	60
James Cary .....	50	Chillion White .....	100
Wm. Sawyer .....	150	Jerimah Holt .....	350
Edwd. Cary .....	100	of Ditto for the Widdo Babb .....	150
Robt. Barlow .....	62	Robt. Yarbborrow .....	100
Tho. Cleaver Sworne .....	200	Robt. Starkey .....	100
Edwd. Stevens .....	80	Henry Seaton .....	170

## APPENDIX

Hugh Howard .....	200	Peter Richeson .....	250
Capt. Booker .....	1000	Benja Clements .....	500
Jno. Stoakes .....	300	Thomas Graves .....	70
Jno. Dobson .....	400	Robt. Page .....	75
Wm. Dobson .....	950	Joseph More .....	150
Edmd. Dobson .....	350	Richard Dixon .....	200
Hugh Allen .....	1250	Elizb. Turner .....	150
George Jackson .....	117	Owen Grathmee .....	250
Jno. Teagle .....	30	Richd. Woodfolk .....	125
Widdo Jones .....	45	Jno. Waters .....	50
Mary Thomas .....	100	Wm. Hilliard .....	80
Thomas Seawell .....	200	Richd. Heywood .....	100
Benj. Lane .....	50	Mary Hemingway .....	150
Valentine Lane .....	80	Wm. Kemp .....	75
Jeffry Garves .....	33	Robt. Francis .....	104
Thomas Coleman .....	250	Joshua Broadbent .....	200
Johanna Austin .....	40	Joseph Coleman .....	200
Majr. Burwell .....	3300	Grustam Clent .....	100
Jno. Satterwright .....	50	Philip Grady .....	150
Jerimiah Holt Junr. ....	150	Jno. Hall .....	125
Charles Stevens .....	75	Tho. Walker .....	300
Richd. Roberts for wife .....	300	Jno. Mixon .....	400
Jno. Sadler .....	125	Tho. Sanders .....	450
James Steavens .....	100	Wm. Smith for Kittson .....	50
Susannah Stubbs .....	300	John Banister .....	2750
Richd. Foster .....	150	Madm. Mary Page .....	3000
Henry Mitchell .....	50	Jno. Lewis Esq. ....	2000
Nathanli. Russell .....	550		
Elizb. Richardson .....	500		28426
Wm. Camp .....	175		
James Row .....	300	Richd. Cordell	
John Butler .....	100	Ware .....	31603
John Smith Esqr. ....	2000	Petso .....	41123
Ditto for Robt. Byron....	400	Kingston .....	46537
Capt. Blackbourne .....	550		
			147698

## A Perfect Role of the Land in Middlesex County Anuo Dom. 1704

Richard Atwood .....	100	Wm. Daniell .....	150
Richard Allin .....	150	Robt. Daniell .....	225
Tho. Blewford .....	100	Henry Freeman .....	200
Mrs. Blaiss .....	300	John Goodrich .....	50
John Bristow .....	140	Geo. Goodloe .....	50
Robt. Blackley .....	100	Geo Guest .....	50
Coll Corbin .....	2260	Richd Gabriell .....	30
Coll Carter .....	1150	Wm. Finley .....	50
John Cheedle .....	50	Wm. Gardner .....	100
Wm. Carter .....	170	Robt. George .....	180
Widdo Chaney .....	800	David George .....	150
Nath. Cranke .....	50	Widdo. Hazellwodd .....	200
Tho. Dyatt .....	200	John Hoare .....	100
John Davie .....	75	Richd. Reynolds .....	50

## APPENDIX

235

Jno. Southerne .....	100	Richd. Daniell .....	210
Richd. Shurly .....	200	Geo. Blake .....	100
Tho. Hapleton .....	200	Edwd Williams .....	100
Wm. Southworth .....	50	Pat Mammon .....	100
Wm. Jones .....	300	Alexander Murray .....	250
Evan Jones .....	50	Poplar Smith .....	550
Esqr. Wormley Estate .....	5200	Olixer Seager .....	380
Wm Churchhill .....	1950	Edwd Gobbee .....	90
Jacob Briston .....	100	Henry Barnes .....	200
Jno. Pace .....	200	John Davis .....	100
John Logie .....	300	Paul Thilman .....	300
John Price .....	519	Hugh Watts .....	80
Henry Perrott .....	1100	Edwd Clark .....	300
Richd Kemp .....	1100	Charles Williams .....	100
Tho Kidd .....	250	Edwin Thacker Estate .....	2500
Francis Weeks .....	225	Thomas Dudly .....	200
Widdo Weeks .....	225	Thomas Mackhan .....	200
Henry Webb .....	100	Richd. Paffitt .....	200
Tho Wood .....	70	Tho. Hiff .....	100
Robt. Williamson .....	200	Peter Bromell .....	100
Tho Lee .....	100	Tho. Blakey .....	100
Edmd. Mickleburrough .....	200	John Robinson .....	1350
Valentine Mayo .....	100	Roger Jones .....	100
Wm. Mountague .....	500	John Nicholls .....	200
Garrett Minor .....	225	George Berwick .....	100
Marvill Mosseley .....	225	Widdo Hurford .....	50
Joseph Mitcham .....	75	Widdo Hackney .....	300
Minie Minor .....	225	Wm. Kilbee .....	600
Humphrey Jones .....	150	Ezikiah Rhodes .....	300
Jno. North .....	200	John Handiford .....	100
Henry Tugill .....	200	John Miller .....	200
Henry Thacker .....	1875	Wm. Scarborow .....	200
Thomas Tozeley .....	500	Wm. Herne .....	75
Charles Moderas .....	100	Robt. Dudley .....	300
Wm. Mullins .....	150	Widdo Mason .....	100
John Smith .....	700	Peter Chilton .....	100
James Smith .....	400	Francis Dobson .....	150
Harry Beverley .....	1000	James Dudley .....	200
George Wortham .....	400	Capt. Berkley .....	750
Capt. Grimes .....	900	Wm. Sutton .....	150
Sarah Mickleborough .....	1000	Sr. Wm. Skipwith .....	350
Christo. Robinson .....	4000	Coll Kemp .....	900
John Vibson .....	100	Wm. Barbee .....	150
James Daniell .....	150	Wm. Wallis .....	300
James Curtis .....	300	Adam Curtin .....	200
Tho. Cranke .....	54	Capt. Wm Armistead .....	2325
Phil. Calvert .....	200		
John Hipkins .....	100		49008

## APPENDIX

## A True &amp; Perfect Rent Roll of all the Lands held in Essex County this present year 1704

Abbott Wm.	150	Bradburn Richd.	100
Andrews Geo.	200	Brown Francis	150
Adcock Edwd.	230	Brown Danll. Junr.	150
Adcock Henry	250	Bryom Henry	100
Acres James	100	Burnett Tho. Junr.	1000
Arving Wm.	100	Baughan James Senr.	600
Allin Erasmus	100	Baughan James	150
Allin Wm.	100	Baughan Henry	100
Ayres Wm.	200	Brown Danll. Senr.	450
Acres Wm.	200	Brown Tho.	50
	1630	Blackiston Argail	200
Baulwar James	800	Burnett John	365
Bendall John	135	Burnett Tho. Junr.	130
Butler John	125	Bailer Jno.	800
Bowers Arthur	600	Brakins Qrtr.	250
Baulwar James	200	Bell Thomas	100
Beesley Wm.	100		19980
Barron Andrew	50	Condute Nathll.	20
Bartlett Tho.	100	Cary Hugh	50
Brown Buskinghan	400	Connoly Edwd.	200
Beeswell Robt.	100	Cogwell Fredirick	250
Beeswell Robt. Junr.	150	Copland Nicho.	300
Brown Wm.	420	Cattlett Jno.	1800
Brown Charles	1000	Covington Richd.	1000
Buckner Richd.	1200	Cook John	112
Buckner Tho.	1000	Chew Larkin	300
Brice Henry	400	Crow Tho.	300
Bourn Jno.	100	Covington Wm	400
Beverly Harry	1000	Cheney John	200
Battail John	1100	Cole Wm.	200
Baulwar John	50	Cheney Wm.	700
Booth Widdo	800	Corbin Tho. Qr	440
Butler Jno.	100	Cockin Tho.	120
Butcher Jno.	150	Coates Samll	300
Bendrey Widdo	700	Cooper Richd.	100
Bird Widdo	100	Cooper Tho.	100
Beckham Symon	100	Copland Jno.	175
Brutnall Richd.	100	Crow Jno.	440
Brook Robt.	400	Chew Larkin	550
Ball Jno.	150	Cooper Wm.	50
Brooks James	100	Compton Wm.	50
Billington Mary	200	Cox Wm.	500
Brooks Peter	275	Callaway Jos.	87
Bowman Peter	400	Coleman Robt.	450
Brooks Robt.	150	Cobnall Symon	100
Brasur Jno.	300	Chamberlain Leond.	350
Brush Richd.	250		
Baker Henry	350		9764

## APPENDIX

237

Daniell James . . . . .	100	Hinshaw Samll. . . . .	200
Devillard Jacob . . . . .	80	Hutson Tho. . . . .	100
David Tho. . . . .	150	Harrison James . . . . .	400
Dudding Andrew . . . . .	230	Harrison Andrew . . . . .	300
Davis Evans . . . . .	150	Hilliard Thomas . . . . .	100
Dobbins Danll. . . . .	550	Harper Wm. . . . .	240
Dressall Timo. . . . .	175	Harmon Henry . . . . .	75
Daughty John . . . . .	200	Hoult Richd. . . . .	100
Dyer Wm. . . . .	100	Humphrie Joe . . . . .	100
Daingerfield Jno. . . . .	270	Hail Jno. . . . .	900
Daingerfield Wm. . . . .	270	Harper John . . . . .	748
Dunn Wm. . . . .	220	Harper Tho. . . . .	350
Dyer Jeffrey . . . . .	100	Hould David . . . . .	100
Day Richd. . . . .	100	Hudson Wm. . . . .	100
Dicks Thomas . . . . .	500	Hinds Thomas . . . . .	100
	12959	Howerton Thomas . . . . .	175
		Hodges Arth . . . . .	100
Evans Rice . . . . .	200	Hows Qtrr . . . . .	300
Edmondson James . . . . .	500	Harwood Peter . . . . .	125
Elliott Alice . . . . .	75	Harway Tho. . . . .	1000
Evitt Tho. . . . .	100	Hudson Tho. . . . .	50
Emondson Tho. . . . .	700	Hudson Wm. . . . .	300
Flowers Isaac . . . . .	250	Hill Leond. . . . .	300
Faulkner Nicho. . . . .	100	Harwar Samll. . . . .	300
Farrell Charles . . . . .	50	Jamison David . . . . .	250
Franklin Nicho. . . . .	130	Jones Wm. . . . .	165
Foster Robt. . . . .	200	Jenkins David . . . . .	50
Foster Jno. . . . .	200	Jewell Tho. . . . .	100
Fisher Jonathan . . . . .	250	Johnson Widdo. . . . .	300
Fisher Benja. . . . .	150	Jones Walter . . . . .	100
Frank Tho. . . . .	175	Johnson Richd. . . . .	50
Fullerton James . . . . .	400	Johnson Wm. . . . .	650
Fossett Wm. . . . .	100	Jones John . . . . .	300
Ferguson Jno. . . . .	150	Jones Richd. . . . .	350
Faulkner Edwd. . . . .	530	Jenkins John . . . . .	93
	17219	Jones Wm. . . . .	300
Green George . . . . .	300	Journey Wm. . . . .	243
Gray Abner . . . . .	350	Johnson Thomas . . . . .	500
Goulding Wm. . . . .	200	Jones Rice . . . . .	500
Gannock Wm. . . . .	2100	Key Robt. . . . .	209
Gaines Barnerd . . . . .	450	Kerby Henry . . . . .	60
Griffin Tho. . . . .	200	Landrum John . . . . .	300
Gibson Jonathan . . . . .	700	Landrum James . . . . .	100
Grigson Tho. . . . .	300	Long Richd. . . . .	300
Gouldman Francis . . . . .	300	Lomax John . . . . .	2000
Goulding John . . . . .	200	Loyd George . . . . .	800
Goulding Edwd. . . . .	380	Lawson Claudy . . . . .	100
Good Richd. . . . .	200	Little Abraham . . . . .	60
Garnett John . . . . .	150	Lacy John . . . . .	100
Glover John . . . . .	100	Law John . . . . .	300
Hawkins John . . . . .	1066	Lattaine Lewis . . . . .	250
		Leveritt Robt. . . . .	100
		Micou Paul . . . . .	150

## APPENDIX

Martin John .....	400	Quarter Xtpher Robinson..	2200
Morgan John .....	100	Quartr Tho. Corbin .....	4000
Mille John .....	150	Qrtr Robt. Thomas .....	200
Medor Tho. .....	300	Quartr John Hay .....	1000
Moseley Benja. ....	1100	Quartr. Wm. Smith .....	3000
Mottley John .....	100	Quartr Gawen Corbin .....	2000
Morris John .....	200	Quartr Peter Ransom .....	300
Moss Robt. ....	180	Quartr David Gwin .....	950
Merritt Tho. ....	*124	Quartr Wm. Upshaw .....	1000
Merritt John .....	100	Quartr Leversons .....	600
Munday Tho. ....	500	Quartr Tho Todd .....	550
Magcon David .....	400	Ridgdall John .....	300
Mice Hno. ....	200	Ramsey Tho. ....	550
Mosseley Robt. ....	100	Rowze Ralph .....	610
Mayfield Robt. ....	100	Rucker Peter .....	500
Matthews Richd. ....	250	Rowze Edwd. ....	300
Moseley Edwd. ....	550	Royston John .....	1000
Merriweather Francis .....	3200	Roberts Edmd. ....	300
Mefflin Zach .....	400	Rebs Henry .....	400
Michaell Jno. ....	200	Reeves Joseph .....	200
Merriweather Tho. ....	2100	Reeves James .....	200
Mefflin Lath .....	400	Roberts John .....	50
Medor John .....	100	Richardson Robt. ....	200
Morse John .....	400	Reynolds James Senr. ....	500
Matthews Benja. ....	200	Reynolds James .....	500
Mountegue Wm. ....	850	Ransom Peter .....	1200
Newbury Nathl. ....	200	Strange Jno. ....	100
Nixson Henry .....	500	Stepp Abra. ....	390
North Wm .....	900	Samll. Antho. ....	300
Newton Nicho. ....	100	Sail Cornelius .....	73
Nightingall John .....	100	Salmon John .....	60
Osman James .....	300	Spiers Jno. ....	160
Presser John .....	450	Smith Wm. ....	150
Poe Samll. ....	800	Stokes Richd. ....	500
Pley Widdo. ....	800	Smith Charles .....	3000
Parker Jno. ....	250	Sullenger Peter .....	400
Pitts Jon. ....	200	Sales Widdo .....	1150
Piskell Jno. ....	300	Shipley Jno. ....	200
Pain Jno. ....	135	Spearman Job .....	300
Price Wm. ....	100	Smith Francis .....	500
Peteras Tho. ....	200	Stallard Samll. ....	100
Powell Honor .....	72	Ship Jos .....	350
Powell Wm. ....	72	Short Tho. ....	150
Powell Place .....	72	Scott Wm. ....	1100
Powell Tho. ....	72	Stogell Jno. ....	100
Payne Widdow .....	1000	Stephens Jno. ....	100
Perkin Henry .....	300	Slaughter Phebe .....	352
Prichett Roger .....	167	Smith Jno. ....	75
Paggett Edmd. ....	700	Smith Jonas .....	100
Price John .....	1100	Sanders John .....	300
Pickett John .....	800	Stanton Jno. ....	95
Perry Samll. ....	225	Shepherd Jeremiah .....	300
Price Wm. ....	100	Smith Tho. ....	50

## APPENDIX

239

Shackelford Francis .....	300	Webb Robert .....	375
Sthrashley Tho .....	200	Webb Isaac .....	200
Staners Tho .....	500	Woodnatt Henry .....	300
Snead Tho .....	950	Wagner John .....	400
Shackelford Henry .....	50	Ward Geo. ....	350
Thorp Widdo .....	400	Wheeler Tho .....	250
Tinsley Tho. ....	111	Young Wm. ....	1000
Thacker Samll. ....	110	Young Giles .....	100
Tomlin Widdo .....	400	Muscoe Salvator .....	100
Taliaferro Francis .....	1300	Moody John .....	150
Thornton Fran. ....	700	Maguffe John .....	100
Tomlin Wm. ....	1600	Brookins Quartr. ....	250
Thomas John .....	100	Smith Jno. Quartr .....	1000
Taliaferro Charles .....	300	Newton Henry .....	100
Thomas Wm. ....	200	Newton Henry .....	175
Taliaferro John .....	2000	Nowell Dall .....	400
Turner George .....	200	Nowell Widdo .....	300
Tomlin Wm. ....	950	Garrett Tho .....	1000
Trible Peter .....	100	Gould Price .....	200
Taylor Richd. ....	650	Green Samll. ....	97
Tilley Matthew .....	200	Gouldman Fran. ....	300
Vanders Bartho .....	400	Gawdin Wm. ....	100
Virget Job .....	50	Grimmall Wm. ....	100
Vincent Vaus .....	450	Gaitwood John .....	400
Wakeland Wm. ....	100	Games John .....	475
Wood Tho. ....	50	Samll. Thompson .....	1000
Winslow Tho. ....	150		
Winslow Henry .....	100		140580
Williams John .....	450	Lands held in the above said County	
Williams Wm. ....	100	the Rents not paid and held by	
Wilson David .....	50	the severall Gentlemen as followth	
Wilton Richd. ....	150	vizt.	
Wheeden Edwd. ....	50	John Smith Esqr. of Glo-	
Ward Widdo. ....	200	cester County .....	800
Whitehorn Widdo. ....	260	Wm. Buckner of Gloucester	
Wms. Emanuell .....	100	by information .....	1500
Watkins Thomas .....	400	Jno. Lightfoot Esqr. New	
Waters John .....	150	Kent County .....	900
Webb James .....	200	Jno. Bridgate in Engld. ....	700
Webb John .....	200	Richd. Wyatt & Jno. Pettus	
Wead Wm. ....	200	of King & Queen Cty. ...	800
Wood Tho. ....	300	Wm. Berry of Richmond	
Williamson Tho .....	100	County .....	400
Williamson Wm. ....	100		
Williamson John .....	100		

Richard Covington

## Accomack Rent Roll

A

Alexander Richards .....	150
Arthur Upshot .....	2020
Antho. West .....	700

Ann Simkins .....	1000
Arthur Donas .....	100
Arnoll Harrison .....	630
Alex. Harrison .....	400

## APPENDIX

Alex. Bagwell .....	413	Edwd Killam .....	720		
Anne Chase .....	200	Edmd Allin .....	200		
Arthur Frame .....	500	Edwd Bagwell for Coll Wm. Custis .....	200		
Alexdr West .....	550	Edmd. Jones .....	800		
Abraham Lambeson .....	100	Elizb. Tinley .....	200		
Alex Benstone .....	270	Edwd Taylor .....	300		
Anne Blake Widdo .....	120	Edmd Tatham .....	200		
Anne Bruxe .....	180	Edmd Bally .....	800		
Ar. Arcade Welburn .....	1854	Edmd Ayres .....	1000		
	9187	Edwd. Miles .....	413		
<b>B</b>					
Burnell Niblett .....	100	Elizb. Mellchop .....	210		
Majr. Bennit Scarbrough ..	521	Edwd. Bell .....	101		
	621	Edwd. More .....	500		
<b>C</b>					
Corneline Hermon .....	321	Edwd. Gunter .....	600		
Christo Stokly .....	200	Edwd Brotherton .....	600		
Charles Scarbrough .....	1000	Elias Blake .....	430		
Charles Leatherbeny .....	1100	Edwd Robins .....	782		
Charles Bally .....	959½	Edwd Bally .....	300		
Charles Pywell .....	150	Elias Taylor .....	1500		
Churchhil Darby .....	125	Elizb. Wharton .....	200		
Charles Evill .....	550	Mrs. Elizb Scarbrough .....	4205		
Charles Champison .....	270				
Christo Hodey .....	500	<b>F</b>			
Cornelius Lofton .....	166	Mr. Francis Mackenny .....	5109		
Charles Stockley .....	170	Francis Robts. ....	200		
Charles Taylor .....	580	Francis Wainhouse .....	700		
Catherine Gland .....	217	Francis Crofton .....	200		
	6312½	Francis Young .....	100		
<b>D</b>					
Dorman Derby .....	225	Finley MackWm .....	100		
Daniell Derby Senr. ....	300	Francis Ayres .....	300		
Dorothy Littlehouse .....	250	Francis Jester .....	200		
David Watson .....	200	Francis Benstone .....	400		
Delight Shield .....	300	Francis Wharton .....	600		
Daniel Derby Junr .....	125				
Daniel Harwood .....	100	<b>G</b>			
Dennis Mores .....	200	Geo. Anthony .....	100		
Daniel Gore .....	3976	Geo. Hastup .....	300		
	5676	Coll Geo Nicho Halk .....	2700		
<b>E</b>		Capt. Geo Parker .....	2609		
Coll Edmd Scarbrough ...	2000	Gervis Baggally .....	700		
Edwd Hitchins .....	170	Garrat Hictlims .....	170		
Edwd Turner .....	750	Geo Parker Sco. Side .....	1200		
		Griffin Savage .....	650		

## APPENDIX

241

Capt. Geo Hope .....	900	Jno Sincocke .....	125
	<hr/> 11067	Jno Metcalfe, Isaac Metcalfe and Samll. Metcalfe ....	600
H		Joseph Touser .....	200
Henry Armtrading .....	175	Jno Stanton .....	200
Henry Chance .....	445	Jno Bally .....	1000
Henry Selman .....	180		<hr/> 13715
Henry Ubankes .....	400		
Henry Lurton .....	363	Jno Melson .....	180
Henry Stokes .....	208	Jno Barnes Senr .....	657
Henry Custis .....	774	Jno Littletone .....	200
Henry Bagwell .....	412	John Nock .....	300
Henry Read .....	350	Jno Killy .....	100
Henry Ayres .....	250	Jacob Morris .....	200
Hill Drummond .....	483	Jno Morris .....	640
Henry Toules .....	300	Jona Aylworth .....	200
Henry Hickman .....	135	James Davis .....	1000
Henry Gibbins .....	250	Jno Parkes .....	200
Henry Truett .....	240	Jno Evans .....	200
	<hr/> 4965	Jno Hull .....	100
J		Jno Blocksom .....	700
John Tounson .....	200	Jno Abbott .....	1170
Joseph Stokley .....	664	Jno Arew .....	234
Jno. Read .....	200	Jno Grey .....	116
Jno. Blake .....	310	Jno Baker .....	400
Joseph Ames .....	375	Jno Wharton .....	150
Joseph Clark .....	200	James Taylor .....	100
Jno. Fisher .....	200	Jno Glading .....	207
James Gray .....	900	Jno Loftland .....	167
Jno. Huffington .....	240	James Smith .....	756
Jno. Legatt .....	300	Majr Jno Robins .....	2700
James Lary .....	100	Jno Collins for Asban .....	1666
James Longoe .....	200	James Walker .....	525
Jno. Merrey .....	350	Jno Whelton .....	90
Jno. Milloy .....	500	Jno Marshall .....	1666
Jno. Pratt .....	50	Jona Owen .....	230
Jno. Revell .....	1450	Jacob Wagaman .....	150
Jno. Road .....	110	Capt John Broadhurst .....	1100
Jno. Rowles .....	650	Jno Dyer .....	200
Jno. Savage Senr .....	350	Mr. John Watts .....	2450
Jno. Charles .....	480	Jno Booth .....	300
Jno Willis Senr .....	430	John Bradford .....	364
Jno Willis Junr .....	350	Ingold Cobb .....	150
James Fairfax .....	900	Jno Griffin .....	150
Joseph Milby .....	830	Jno Mitchell .....	400
John West Junr .....	500	John Parker .....	970
Jno Jenkins .....	400	James Alexander .....	1250
Jonathan James .....	150	Jno Burocke .....	200
John Rodgers .....	100	James Sterferar .....	50
Jno Collins .....	100	Jno Perry .....	217
		Jno Drummond .....	1550
		Jno Carter on Foxs Island	203

## APPENDIX

Jno Warington .....	100	Roules Major .....	157
Jno Bagwell .....	465	Rouland Savage Senr .....	950
Jno Wise Senr .....	800	Robt. Taylor .....	95
Jno Wise Junr .....	400	Richd. Rodgers .....	450
Jno Dix .....	500	Richd Killam .....	1900
Isaac Dix .....	500	Robt. Wattson .....	425
Jno Hickman .....	454	Richd Jones .....	500
Jno Onians .....	200	Robt. Hutchinson .....	934
Coll Jno Custis Esqr.....	5950	Reynold Badger .....	150
John Coslin .....	50	Robt. West .....	400
	46692	Richd Cuttler .....	450
<b>M</b>			
Michaell Recetts .....	300	Robt. Cole .....	125
Mrs. Mattilda West .....	3600	Richd Drummond .....	600
Marke Evell .....	250	Robt. Stocomb .....	300
Mary Wright .....	200	Robt. Norton .....	1050
	4350	Richd Grindall .....	350
<b>N</b>			
Nicholas Mellchops .....	285	Roger Hickman .....	135
Nathaniel Williams .....	64	Robt Lewis .....	200
Nathaniell Rattcliff .....	300	Roger Abbott .....	450
	649	Richard Hill .....	350
<b>O</b>			
Owen Collonell .....	500	Ralph Justice .....	1050
Overton Mackwilliams .....	200	Richd Hinman .....	1800
Obedience Pettman .....	115	Robt Davis .....	384
	815	Ragnall Aryes .....	300
<b>P</b>			
Peter Major .....	113	Roger Miles .....	200
Philip Parker .....	150	Richd Bundike .....	773
Peter Rogers .....	167	Richd Kittson .....	1300
Perry Leatherbury .....	1750	Robt. Bally .....	100
Peter Turlington .....	79	Richd Starlin .....	150
Peter Ease .....	250	Richd Flowers .....	200
Philip Fisher .....	433	Richd Price .....	100
Peter Chawell .....	250	Robt. Pitts .....	2300
	3192	Robt Adkins .....	200
<b>R</b>			
Robt. Bell .....	650	Rebeckha Benstone .....	270
Richd Bally Senr. ....	2100	Richd Hillayres .....	300
Richd Bally Junr .....	180		
Richd Garrison .....	468		
		<b>S</b>	
<b>S</b>			
Samuell Benstone .....	300	Sarah Beach .....	300
Sarah Beach .....	300	Sillvanus Cole .....	250
Symon Sosque .....	325	South Littleton Widdo .....	2870
Stephen Woltham .....	244	Stephen Warrington .....	400
Steph. Warrington .....	400	Symon Mitchell .....	300
Stephen Drummond .....	300	Stephen Harrison .....	50
Selby Harrison .....	50	Sollomon Evell .....	125
Samll Young .....	50	Sarah Reyley .....	150
Sebastian Dellistations Senr	500		

## APPENDIX

243

Sebastian Dellistations Junr	400		W
Skinner Wollope	2485	Wm. Robins	200
Samll. Sandford	3250	Wm Patterson	200
Sebastian Silverthorn	150	Wm Bevens	400
Symon Smith	200	Wm Matthews	400
Sarah Coe	900	Wm Shepherd	200
Samll Taylor	1232	Wm Whett	400
Sarah Evins	150	Winfred Woodland	333
Sebastian Croper	600	Wm Andrews	300
Samuell Jester	200	Wm Custis	1500
	—	Wm Darby	83
	15731	Wm Fletcher	200
		Wm Killam	450
		Wm Lingoe	300
		Wm Major	130
Tho Burton	600	Wm Meeres	150
Tho Bud	500	Wm Mack Sear	800
Tho Boules	300	Wm Savage	150
Tho Clark	100	Wm Waite	110
Tho Middleton	350	Wm Sill	200
Tho Stringer	600	Wm Waite Junr	600
Tho Haule	500	Wm Bradford	3500
Tho Taylor	100	Wm Rogers	200
Tho Fockes	300	Wm Wise	400
Tho Bagwell	465	Wm Finey	800
Madm Tabitha Hill	3600	Wm Consalvins	100
Tho Rose	7	Wm Phillips	200
Tho Webb	50	Wm Parker	362
Tho Savage	450	Wm Cole	375
Tho Jones	100	Wm Merill	150
Tho Scott	100	Wm Johnson	150
Tho Reyley	225	Wm Lewis	150
Tho Ternall	150	Walter Hayes	130
Tho Simpson	520	Wm Chance	450
Tho Coper	711	Wm Milby	250
Tho Miles	202	Wm Nicholson	600
Thomas Bonwell	300	Wm Burton	500
Tho Bell Senr.	100	Wm Willett	842
The Bell Junr	100	Wm Hudson	270
Tho Touson Kiquotan	800	Wm Lewis	300
Tho Stockley	363	Wm Young	144
Tho Jester	100	Wm Liechfield	154
Tho Smith	300	Wm Bunting	150
Thomas Crippin	648	Wm Nock Junr	400
Tho Wilkinson	50	Wm Lucas	300
Tho Jenkinson	374	Mary Mellechop	498
Tho Moore	166	Wm Daniell	200
Tho Allen	700	Wm Silverthorn	100
Tho Smith Savannah	200	Wm Garman	475
Tho Perry	232	Wm White	600
Tho Tonson	400	Wm Broadwater	500
Tho Smith Gingateague	693	Wm Taylor	100
Lieut Coll Robinson	600	Wm Williamson	600
	—	Wm Brittingham	538
	15956		

## APPENDIX

Wm. Benstone Jun.	270
Wm Dickson for Mr. Lit- tleton	1050
Wm Waite Senr	225
Wm Taylor	1400
	24599
	196899½

Added to this Rent Roll the  
following Lands of which  
the Quit Rents may pos-  
sibly be recovered tho the  
Owners live out of the  
Country Viz.

Jonas Jackson	500
Robt. Andrews	500
Joseph Morris	200
Robt. Meros	200
Hillary Stringer	950
Tho Fisher	133
Jno Fisher	133
Timo Coe	4100
David Hagard	130

6846

11707

Jno Wise Sheriff

## The Rent Roll of Northampton County for the Year of our Lord God 1704

## A

Andrews Robt.	300
Andrews Andrew	100
Addison John	350
Abdell Tho	125
Abdell Jno	200
Abdell Wm	125
Alligood John	300
Angell James	100
Alligood Henry	100

## B

Bullock Geo	100
Boner Geo	150
Brown Tho	1862
Benthal Joseph Senr	793
Benthal Joseph Junr	150
Branson Francis	100
Bateson	200
Billot Jno	400
Bell Geo	400
Billott Wm	100

Brewer Jno	50
Blackson Jno	100
Brooks Jeane	100
Beadwine Jno	200
Berthall Danll	258
Baker John	400
Brickhouse Geo	2100

## C

Cob Samll	130
Coape Wm	200
Custis Jno Coll	3400
Collier Bartho.	150
Carpenter Charles	240
Cox Jno	500
Church Samll	143
Cleg Jno. Senr	204
Clog Henry	204
Carvy Richd	100
Cowdry Josiah	167
Cormeck Mich	100
Clerk Jno	100

## APPENDIX

245

Corban Geo .....	250	Fitchett Joshua .....	100
Clerk Geo .....	833	Floyd Berry & Matthew ..	555
Caple Nath .....	100		
Callinett Jno .....	100		G
Crew John .....	300	Gogni David .....	150
Costin Francis .....	275	Gill Robt. ....	200
Custis Majr John .....	3250	Gascoyne Robt. ....	125
Custis Hancock .....	50	Gascoyne Wm .....	525
Chick Tho. ....	100	Greene Jno Senr .....	2200
Downing Jno. ....	70	Giddens Tho .....	227
Dewy Geo .....	300	Grice Peter .....	200
Dewy Jacob .....	100	Godwin Devorix .....	600
Delby Margery .....	450	Goffogan Tho .....	100
Dowty Rowland .....	150	Guelding Charles .....	200
Dunton John .....	170	Griffith Jerimiah .....	345
Dunton Tho .....	400	Griffith Benja .....	200
Dowman John .....	100		H
Dullock John .....	100	Hill Francis .....	100
Denton Tho .....	400	Henderson John .....	250
Dunton Tho Junr .....	120	Haggaman Isaac .....	750
Dunton Wm .....	420	Harmonson Jno .....	1600
Dunton Benj .....	220	Harmonson Henry .....	1250
Duparks Tho .....	90	Hanby Charles .....	25
Davis Jno .....	850	Hanby Richd .....	75
Dunton Joseph .....	120	Hanby Danll .....	50
Dixon Michaell .....	460	Hanby John .....	150
		Harmonson Capt Wm .....	308
		Harmonson Geo .....	1586
E		Harmonson Tho .....	400
Eshon Jno .....	600	Hawkins Jno Senr .....	66
Evans John .....	200	Hawkins Jno Junr .....	66
Edmunds David .....	500	Hawkins Gideon .....	66
Evans Tho .....	300	Hunto Groton .....	485
Esdoll Geo .....	100	Hunt John .....	440
Eyres Tho .....	1133	Hunt Tho .....	250
Eyres Nich .....	325	Hall Francis Widdo .....	340
Eyres Capt Jno .....	774		J
Eyres Anne Wido. ....	733	Johnson John Sent .....	250
Esdoll Edwd. ....	100	Johnson John Junr .....	100
		Johnson Jacob .....	350
F		Isaacs John Jnr .....	100
Fisher John .....	637½	Joynes Major .....	150
Francisco Dan .....	150	James Joan Widdo .....	250
Fisher Tho .....	637½	Johnson Obedience Capt ..	400
Foster Robt. ....	150	Johnson Tho Junr .....	75
Fabin Paul .....	60	Johnson Thomas Senr ...	400
Frost Tho .....	100	Jackson Jonah & John ..	625
Frank Jno .....	500	Joynes Edmd .....	200
Floyd Charles .....	378	Joynes Edwd .....	200
Freshwater Geo .....	200	Johnson Jeptha Senr .....	50
Frizell Geo .....	140		
Freshwater Wm .....	200		

## APPENDIX

Jacob Phillip Senr .....	350	Pyke Henry .....	150
Johnson Jepha Junr .....	200	Powell John .....	636½
Johnson Obedience & Jepha Sen .....	250	Pittett Tho .....	300
Johnson Edind .....	400	Pittet Justian .....	200
Jacob Richd .....	200	Powell Samll .....	200
Jacob Abraham .....	50	Paine Daniell .....	150
		Piggott Ralph .....	1368
K			
Kendall Wm .....	2410	Read Thomas .....	150
Knight John .....	100	Rascow Arthur .....	100
		Ronan Wm .....	150
L			
Lawrence John .....	120	Roberts Jno .....	200
Lailler Luke .....	100	Richards Lettis .....	150
Lucas Tho .....	100	Robins Jno Majr .....	1180
Lewis Robt .....	100	Robins Littleton .....	1000
Littleton Susannah Wido..	4050	Rabishaw Wm .....	55
Luke John .....	400	Roberts Obedience .....	260
		Robinson Benjamin .....	250
M			
Marshall Geo .....	250	Shepherd Jno .....	200
Farshall Jno .....	250	Smith Joseph .....	250
Maddox Tho .....	1500	Smith Samll .....	150
Michaell Yearldy .....	400	Smith Jno .....	200
Matthews John .....	275	Savage Tho .....	450
Major John .....	390	Smith Tho .....	400
Map John .....	50	Smith Abrah .....	300
Moore Matthew .....	175	Seady Antho .....	120
Mackmellion Tho .....	300	Scott Widdo .....	750
More Gilbert .....	225	Smith Richd minor .....	300
Morraine John .....	119½	Scot Geo .....	100
More Jno .....	545	Smith Richd .....	99
More Eliner .....	175	Scot Jno .....	100
		Scott Henry .....	800
N			
Nicholson Wm .....	600	Scott David .....	300
Nottingham Wm .....	150	Smith Peter .....	450
Nottingham Joseph .....	150	Sanders Richd .....	100
Nottingham Richd .....	350	Smaro John .....	800
Nottingham Benja .....	300	Shepherd Tho .....	140
Nelson John .....	100	Sanders Eustick .....	100
		Sanderson John .....	636
O			
Only Clement .....	200	Savidge John .....	410
Odear John .....	100	Stringer Hillary .....	1250
		Savidge Capt Tho .....	1600
P			
Parramore Tho .....	400	Savidge Elkington .....	750
Preson Tho .....	610	Scot Wm Senr .....	153
Powell Frances Widdo ...	1225	Straton Benja .....	745
Palmer Samll .....	1562	Smith Geo .....	133
		Stockley Jno Senr .....	370
		Shepheard Widdo .....	830
		Seamore John .....	200

## T

Tilney John .....	350	Warren Robt. ....	190
Tryfort Barth .....	147	Water Lieut-Coll Wm ....	700
Teague Simeon .....	100	Webb Charles .....	133 $\frac{1}{4}$
Turner Richd .....	50	Willett Wms .....	2650
Teague Tho .....	200	Waterson Richd .....	150
Tankard Wm .....	450	Wilkins Argoll .....	150
Tanner Paul .....	148	Walter Elizb Widdo .....	100
		Warren Joseph .....	50

## W

Webb Henry .....	100		
Wills Thorn .....	300	Lands not paid for vizt	
White John .....	400	Gleab formerly Capt Fox-	
Wilson Tho .....	250	crofts .....	1500
Westerhouse Adryan Senr.	200	John Majr at Occahannock	200
Walker John .....	300	Hogbin not being in Virginia	100
Ward Tho .....	120	Tho Smith .....	300
Walter John .....	400	Tho Marshall orphan .....	75
Waterfield Wm .....	200	Jno Rews not in Virginia ..	100
Warren John .....	525		
Warren Argoll .....	350		2275
Widgeon Robt .....	100	The total on the other	
Wilkins Jno .....	150	side is .....	99671 acres
Webb Edwd .....	200	Added to it ye Glebe	
Wilcock Jno .....	200	land .....	1500
Warren James .....	50		
Waterson Wm .....	855		101171 acres

The preceding Sheets are true copys of the Rentolls for the year 1704 given in and accounted for by the several Sheriffs in April 1705 and sworne to before his Excelcy according to which they made up their accounts of the Quitrents with

Will Robertson Clerk.



*INDEX*



# INDEX

- A**CCOMAC,  
farms and tithables of, 58; 79.  
Allen, Arthur,  
six tithables, 57.  
Allen, William,  
*Burgess* in 1629, 73.  
Allerton, Isaac,  
deals in servants, 48.  
Ambrose, Robert,  
deals in servants, 49.  
Anbury, Major,  
describes Virginia upper class, 158.  
Andros, Sir Edmund,  
29; 35; 52; hesitates to deprive wealthy  
of land holdings, 143-144.  
Archer, George  
deals in servants, 49; extensive land-  
owner, 79.  
Armetrading, Henry,  
79.  
Artisans,  
became planters in Virginia, 27; called  
for in broadside of 1610, 28; on the  
plantations, 156-157.  
Ashton, Peter,  
deals in servants, 48.  
Austin, James,  
deals in servants, 48.  
Avery, Richard,  
his cattle, 101; inventory of, 106.
- B**ACON, Nathaniel, Sr.,  
109; 110.  
Bacon, Nathaniel, Jr.,  
describes poverty in Virginia, 91; re-  
bellion of and *Navigation Acts*, 92-93;  
says peoples hoped in *Burgesses*, 109;  
113.  
Baker, John,  
buys *Button's Ridge*, 49.  
Baldwin, William,  
landowner, 79.  
Ballard, Thomas,  
109.  
Ball, William,  
has 22 slaves.  
Baltic,  
English trade of, 8; Denmark controls  
entrance to, 9; wars endanger trade to,  
9; cheap labor of, 16; 17; tobacco trade  
to, 118-119; trade to injured by wars,  
131, 148.  
Banister, John,  
has 88 slaves, 158.  
Barbadoes,  
complain of *Navigation Acts*, 94.
- Barnett, Thomas,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1629, 74.  
Bassett, William,  
deals in servants, 48.  
Beer, George Lewis,  
defends *Navigation Acts*, 86-87; says  
trade restrictions did not cause *Bacon's*  
*Rebellion*, 92; statement of concerning  
county grievances, 93; denies that ser-  
ious opposition existed to *Navigation*  
*Acts*, 93-94.  
Bell, Richard,  
landowning freedman, 74.  
Bennett, Richard,  
estate of described, 108.  
Bennett, Samuel,  
landowning freedman, 74.  
Berkeley, John,  
conducts iron works in Virginia, 18.  
Berkeley, Lord John,  
90.  
Berkeley, Sir William,  
describes servants, 34; describes early  
mortality among servants, 39; estimates  
servants at 6,000 in 1671, 41; instructed  
to prohibit foreign trade, 69; permits  
foreign trade during *Civil War*, 69;  
calls Virginia land of opportunity, 75;  
proclaims Charles II, 84, 111; 89; de-  
scribes poverty of Virginia, 90, 91, 92,  
93; controls Assembly, 94; goes to Eng-  
land to combat *Navigation Acts*, 94-95;  
plans to establish manufactures, 95;  
denounces *Navigation Acts*, 95-96; 98;  
secures body guard, 111; elected Gover-  
nor prior to Restoration, 112; fears  
King's resentment, 113; small planters  
turn against in *Bacon's Rebellion*, 113;  
estimates slaves at 2,000 in 1670, 124;  
125; 160.  
Beverley, Robert, Sr.,  
extensive dealer in servants, 48, 109;  
113.  
Beverley, Robert, Jr.,  
61; imports slaves, 130; describes pride  
of poor whites, 155.  
Bibbie, Edmund,  
deals in servants, 49.  
Binns, Thomas,  
eight tithables, 57.  
Bishop, John,  
*Burgess* and landowner, 78.  
Blackstone, John,  
patents land, 74.  
Bland, John,  
remonstrates against *Navigation Acts*,  
88-89; 93.

## INDEX

- Blair, Rev. John,  
asks funds for college, 50, 136.
- Blewit, Capt.,  
sets up iron works in Virginia, dies, 181.
- Board of Trade,  
arrears of quit rents reported to, 51;  
*Nicholson* writes to concerning rent roll, 52; says servants not slaves, 60; *Berkeley* protests to, 95, 119; asks reasons for emigration of *Virginia* whites, 140; seeks to limit size of land grants, 143; again alarmed at emigration from *Virginia*, 145, 147, 157.
- Bolling, Mrs. Mary,  
has 51 slaves, 158.
- Brent, Giles,  
deals in servants, 48; 109; 113.
- Brider, Joseph,  
deals in servants, 48; 109.
- Briggs, Gray,  
has 43 slaves, 158.
- British Empire,  
beginnings of misunderstood, 14; begun, 19; important rôle of tobacco in, 27.
- Broadnac, John,  
128.
- Broadsides,  
in 1610 calls for settlers for *Virginia*, 28.
- Browne, Robert,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Browne, William,  
nine tithables, 57.
- Bruce, Philip Alexander,  
describes small planters, 54.
- Brunswick,  
land patents in small, 145.
- Bullock, William,  
denies that servants are slaves, 60.
- Burgesses,  
54, petition King, 65; complain of high freight rates, 72; freedmen among, 73-75; *Navigation Acts* and, 94-95; represent interest of small planters, 109; defy the king, 110; petition of, 110; rule *Virginia*, 1652-1660, 112; growing influence of, 109.
- Burwell, Francis,  
patents land in *James City*, 77.
- Burwell, John,  
has 42 slaves, 158.
- Burwell, Lewis,  
deals in servants, 48; 109.
- Burcher, William,  
patents land, 79.
- Bushrod, John,  
sells land, 49.
- Butt, Thomas,  
deals in servants, 48.
- Button, Robert,  
receives estate, 49.
- Button, Thomas,  
owner of *Button's Ridge*, 49.
- Byrd, William I,  
says rent rolls inaccurate, 52; 109; uses slaves, 130.
- Byrd, William II,  
gives reasons for emigration to *Carolina*, 146.
- CARTER, John,  
109.
- Carter, Robert,  
has 126 slaves, 153.
- Carleill, Capt. Christopher,  
urges trade with America, 11.
- Carolina,  
emigration to from *Virginia*, 99-100, 139-146.
- Cattle,  
plentiful in *Virginia*, 101.
- Chambers, William,  
servants and slaves of, 59.
- Chandler, John,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Charles I,  
considers smoking harmful, 26; tries to limit tobacco planting in *Virginia*, 27; tries to limit English tobacco crop, 63; limits price of tobacco, 65; regulates tobacco trade, 67-69; 70; defied by *Assembly*, 110; 111.
- Charles II,  
33; proclaimed in *Virginia*, 84; 111; 93; 96; not restored in *Virginia* before Restoration in England, 112; tyranny of, 114.
- Charles City,  
plantations small, 53; 54; farms and tithables of, 58; 79; 81.
- Chastellux,  
describes poor whites of *Virginia*, 152; notes indolence of poor whites, 155.
- Chew, Larkin,  
dealer in *Spotsylvania* land, 154.
- Claiborne, William,  
deals in servants, 48.
- Clayton, Thomas,  
80.
- Clergy,  
many plant tobacco, 28.
- Clothing,  
want of felt in *Virginia*, 103.
- Cloyse, Pettyplace,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Cole, Edward,  
patents land in *James City*, 77.
- Colonial expansion,  
sought as remedy for British economic dependence, 10; urged by economists, 11; 12; 13.
- Colonial system,  
68; imperfectly enforced prior to 1660, 67-69; 85-86; embodied in *Navigation Acts*, 85; colonies to supplement England, 86; workings of at end of 17th century, 120; British conception of, 136.
- Commerce,  
of England with Baltic, 8; principles of long known, 11; of England with Europe and East, 12; of England with France declines, 13; affords key to history, 22; in reexported tobacco, 70; in

tobacco revives after 1683, 114-115; in reexported tobacco, 116-120; importance of in tobacco for England, 119, 122.

**C**ommonwealth,  
tobacco high under, 66; Virginians trade abroad under, 69; 98; attitude of Virginia under, 110-11.

**C**onstable, John,  
trades illegally, 69.

**C**ooke, John,  
landowning freedman, 74.

**C**ornell, Samuel,  
servants and slaves of, 59.

**C**ouncil,  
65; complains of high freight rates, 72; 90; describes poverty in Virginia, 91; says Virginia ready to revolt to Dutch, 96; 109; 110; members of hold land illegally, 143; gives reasons for immigration out of Virginia, 145; describes misery in Virginia, 150; declining influence of, 159.

**C**reighton, Henry,  
sells 100 acres, 50.

**C**riminals,  
few sent to Virginia, 32, 33; make no imprint on social fabric, 33.

**C**rocker, Wm.,  
servants and slaves of, 59.

**C**romwell, Oliver,  
sends Irish servants to Virginia, 33.

**C**rump, Thomas,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1632, 74; landowner, 75.

**C**ulpeper, Lord,  
fears ruin of Virginia, 91, 114.

**C**ustis, John,  
109.

**D**AINGERFIELD, William,  
has 61 slaves, 157.

**D**awson, William,  
landowning freedman, 74.

**D**ay, John,  
80.

**D**elaware,  
manufactures of lure poor Virginia whites, 141; migration to, 139-146.

**D**elk, Roger,  
landowning freedman, 74.

**D**icks, John,  
purchases land, 49.

**D**igges, Dudley,  
109.

**D**igges, William,  
has 72 slaves, 158.

**D**inwiddie county,  
poor whites in, 151; small slave holders of, 153; large slave holders in, 158.

**D**odman, John,  
landowner, 79.

**D**orch, Walter,  
inventory of, 106.

**D**uties,  
French put on English woolens, 13; on reexported tobacco partly refunded, 70; on reexported tobacco, 117; on tobacco yield grown large revenue, 120.

**E**DWARDS, John,  
slaves of in plot, 128.

**E**dwards, William,  
has six tithables, 57; slaves of in plot, 128.

**E**ffingham, Lord,  
tyranny of in Virginia, 114.

**E**lizabeth City,  
plantations of small, 53; farms and tithables of, 58; servants and slaves in, 59.

**E**migration,  
from Virginia in years from 1660 to 1725, 40, 62, 139-146; not caused by large land grants, 144-145; extent of, 146.

**E**ngland,  
colonial expansion necessary for, 7; forests depleted, 7; industry declining, 8; Baltic trade of, 8; future depends on colonies, 13; 14; joy of at founding of Virginia, 15; disappointed in Virginia, 19; tobacco bill of, 26; supplies Virginia with labor, 31; poverty in, 31; cannot consume entire colonial tobacco crop, 86; tobacco planting in prohibited, 87; glut of tobacco in, 68-89; adheres to colonial policy, 95.

**E**pes, Francis,  
79, 127.

**E**ssex,  
land transfers in, 46; plantations of small, 53; farms and tithables of, 558.

**F**ALLING Creek,  
iron works at, 17; destroyed in 1622, 18.

**F**ane, Francis,  
says slave labor cheapens tobacco, 132.

**F**ish,  
plentiful in Virginia, 15.

**F**ithian, Philip,  
describes poor whites of Virginia, 152, 155.

**F**itzhugh, William,  
109; refers to slave imports, 130.

**F**lax,  
in Virginia, 15.

**F**leet, tobacco,  
brings servants, 35; size of in 1690 and 1706, 122.

**F**oster, Armstrong,  
79, 80.

**F**oster, Robert,  
buys 200 acres, 50.

**F**owl, wild,  
abundant in colonial Virginia, 102.

**F**ox, William,  
has 25 slaves, 153.

**F**rance,  
exports wine and silk, 12; British trade with declines, 13; tobacco trade to, 119; trade to injured by war, 131.

**F**reedmen,  
80 per cent of servants become, 40; prior to 1660 remained in Virginia, 40;

- form large part of population, 41; annual recruits of, 41; usually young, 42; might acquire property, 43; perform bulk of work, 43; what became of 43; become small planters, 60; outfit of, 61; not entitled to land, 61; prosperity of hinges on tobacco, 62; Virginia land of opportunity for, 71; profits from tobacco, 71-72; in *Burgesses*, 73-74; prosperous, 74-80; little hope of advancement for after 1660, 97-100; few in rent roll of 1704, 122-123.
- F**reemen, entitled to headrights, 35; many come to Virginia, 36; become small planters, 60-75; many pay own passage, 81-82.
- F**reight rates, high from England, 71-72; excessive, 90.
- F**ruit, 12, abundant in Virginia, 102.
- F**uel, abundant in Virginia, 105.
- G**ARDENS, common in Virginia, 102, 105.
- G**arnet, John, buys 600 acres, 50.
- G**eorge, The, takes cargo of tobacco to England, 25; 64.
- G**ilbert, George, patents land in *James City*, 77, 79.
- G**ilbert, Sir Humphrey, voyage to America, 11.
- G**lass, possibilities for in Virginia, 15; beginning made of in Virginia, 17; early history of in Virginia, 18-19.
- G**loucester, average plantation in, 54; farms and tithables of, 58; 80; 113; poor whites of, 151; small slave holders in, 154; large slave holders in, 157; 159.
- G**ood, John, describes poverty in Virginia, 91.
- G**ooch, Governor, says large holdings no impediment to settlement, 145; says poor whites make best tobacco, 147.
- G**overnor, plants tobacco, 28; appoints sheriffs, 51; makes efforts to collect quit rents, 51; 65; neglects servants, 73; 90; 109; elected by burgesses, 1652-1660, 112.
- G**oring, John, servants and slaves of, 59.
- G**rain, abundance of in Virginia, 102.
- G**raves, Ralph, his servant valued at £10, 127.
- G**rey, James, buys 200 acres, 49.
- G**rey, John, his cattle, 101; inventory of, 106.
- G**rey, Francis, Burgess and landowner, 78-79.
- G**rey, Thomas, 78.
- H**AKLUYT, Richard, advises colonial expansion, 11; shows British dependence on Spain, 12; expects surplus of population in England to emigrate to America, 16; 19.
- H**ammond, John, advice to servants, 61; describes Virginia residences, 104.
- H**armar, Charles, imports slaves, 124.
- H**arris, John, *Burgess* in 1629, 73.
- H**arrison, Benjamin 109.
- H**art, Henry, his slave in plot, 128.
- H**artwell, Henry, deals in servants, 48.
- H**arvey, Sir John, complains of low prices for tobacco, 65; asks freedom of trade for Virginia, 68; testifies to illegal foreign trade, 68-69; complains of high freight rates, 72; ejected by people, 110.
- H**atfield, James, landowning freedman, 75.
- H**eadrights, described, 34; 35; averaged about 1750 a year, 41; determine size of land grants, 47; brought in by well known planters, 48; do not belong to servant, 61; appear in wills, 76; transfer of by sale, 76; become landowners, 77; not all servants, 77; compared with rent roll, 97-99.
- H**emp, in Virginia, 15.
- H**enrico, false returns in, 55; farms and tithables of, 58; servants and slaves in, 59; 79.
- H**ill, Edward, 109.
- H**ill, John, landowning freedman, 75; book binder at *Oxford*, 75.
- H**odge, John, servants and slaves of, 59.
- H**olding, John, landowner, 79.
- H**olland, exports fish, 12; trade of declines, 13; controls slave trade, 31; 125; tobacco exports to, 86-89; *Navigation Acts* cut exports to, 87; distributor of English colonial tobacco, 88; plants own tobacco, 88; wars with, 89; Virginians threaten to revolt to, 91, 96; 116; tobacco exports to, 120; fights to preserve her monopoly of slave trade, 126; seeks to control tobacco trade on continent, 149-150.
- H**oney, produced in Virginia, 102.

# INDEX

255

- Hotten's Emigrants to America,  
gives lists of servants, 42; 73.
- Houses,**  
comfortable in Virginia, 103-104.
- Howlett, William,  
buy 200 acres, 50.
- I**MMIGRATION,  
volume of in 17th century, 35-36; fixes  
character of eastern Virginia, 36; not  
restricted to servants, 36.
- Indentures,  
system of, 32; terms of, 61.
- Indians, desire to convert, 14; revere to-  
bacco, 24; unsuited for laborers, 30.
- Industry,  
22; pictured in Virginia, 28; Virginia  
not suited for, 29.
- Inventories,  
throw light on distribution of servants  
and slaves, 59; 73; typical examples of,  
106-107.
- Iron,  
smelting of exhausts forests, 8; could  
be smelted in Virginia, 15; early manu-  
facture of in Virginia, 17-18.
- Isle of Wight county,  
farms and tithables of, 58; 79.
- J**ACKSON, William,  
has 49 slaves, 158.
- James I,  
forced to use tobacco, 25; considers  
smoking harmful, 26; regulates tobacco  
trade, 67.
- James II,  
tyranny of, 114.
- James City county,  
plantations and tithables of, 58; land-  
owners listed as headrights in, 76-77;  
79; slave plot in, 128.
- James River,  
iron works on, 17; 39; 70; 148.
- Jamestown,  
14; glass furnace at, 18; streets of  
planted with tobacco, 25; 86; 111; 112.
- Jefferson, Thomas,  
says slavery made whites lazy, 155.
- Jeffreys, Jeffrey,  
imports slaves, 131.
- Jennings, Edmund,  
109; describes slave plot, 128-129; says  
slaves injure credit of Virginia, 130;  
says few servants in 1708, 130-131; de-  
scribes slave trade, 130-131; describes  
migration of poor whites, 145-146.
- Johnson, John,  
sells land, 49.
- Johnson, Joseph,  
transports servants, 78-79.
- Jones, Anthony,  
servant, becomes landowner, 74.
- Jones, Hugh,  
says tenants small part of population,  
45; 155; says negroes make poor arti-  
sans, 156.
- Jordan, Lt. Col.,  
pays taxes on seven tithables, 56.
- K**EMP, Richard,  
says immigrants mostly servants, 82.
- King William county,  
farms and tithables of, 58.
- King and Queen county,  
farms and tithables of, 58.
- Kinsman, Richard,  
makes *perry*, 108.
- Knight, Sir John,  
says Virginia ready to revolt to Holland,  
96.
- L**ABOR,  
lack of in Virginia, 16; foreign at  
Jamestown, 18; lack of handicaps indus-  
try, 19; 20; in Virginia determined by  
tobacco, 23; cheap needed in Virginia,  
29; serious problem, 29; Indians un-  
suited for, 30; slave, 30; England sup-  
plies, 31; indenture system to supply,  
32; influx of, 35.
- Lancaster,  
79; poor planters in, 151; small slave  
holders of, 153.
- Land,  
cheap in Virginia, 29; 45; transfers of  
in Surry county, 46; in York, 46; in  
*Rappahannock*, 46; listed in rent roll of  
1704-5, 53; monopoly of said to cause  
migration from Virginia, 141-143; large  
tracts granted, 142-144.
- Land grants,  
average extent of, 47; determined by  
method of transporting immigrants, 47;  
vary greatly in size, 47; not index to  
size of plantations, 49.
- Landowners,  
few large in 17th century, 43; glad to  
sell in small parcels, 45; chiefly small  
proprietors, 46; in census of 1626, 46;  
in York county, 46; in Essex, 46; often  
avoid quit rents, 51; listed in rent roll  
of 1704-5, 53; small proprietors neg-  
lected in history, 54; often poor men,  
55; many work farms with own hands,  
57; *Government* expects servants to be-  
come, 62; profits of from tobacco, 71-72.
- Larkin, George,  
describes large land holdings, 144.
- Lawrence, Richard,  
landowner, 79.
- Leah and Rachel*,  
61.
- Lee, Richard,  
imports 80 slaves, 125.
- Leightenhouse, Thomas,  
127.
- Linton, John,  
estimates colonial tobacco, 115; esti-  
mates amount of reexported tobacco,  
118; declares Baltic tobacco trade  
ruined, 148; describes tobacco raising  
in Holland, 149.

- L**ondon Company,  
national character of, 13; plans manufactures for Virginia, 15; cannot secure laborers for Virginia, 16; sets up iron works at Falling Creek, 17-18; displeased at tobacco culture in Virginia, 25; tobacco only hope of, 26; expects Virginia to duplicate England, 28; high price of tobacco pleases, 64; 73; 75.
- L**udwell, Philip,  
109; 113.
- L**udwell, Thomas,  
places average tobacco crop at 1200 pounds, 64; 90; says tobacco worth nothing, 90; 91; 96.
- M**ANUFACTURES,  
attempts to establish in Virginia, 15-19; cause of failure, 19; purchased from Dutch, 68-69; colonial system based on expectation of, 86; Berkeley tries to establish, 95; local in Virginia, 103; of tobacco in England, 119, 122; exports of to tobacco colonies, 120; in northern colonies lure Virginia whites, 140; 141; on plantations, 108; 156-157.
- M**arket,  
not free for tobacco, 66; tobacco sent to foreign, 67-70; Navigation Acts cut off foreign, 87; tobacco reexported to continental, 116-120; Virginia and Maryland furnish for England, 120.
- M**aryland,  
emigration of whites from, 140; House of Delegates of explains migration, 191.
- M**ason, Francis,  
seven tithables, 57.
- M**ason, Winfield,  
has 40 slaves, 158.
- M**assacre,  
iron works destroyed during, 18.
- M**atthews, Samuel,  
his estate described, 108.
- M**erchant marine,  
threatened in England by lack of shipbuilding materials, 9; part of sea defense, 10; depleted at end of 16th century, 10; tobacco exports aid British, 26, 119, 122.
- M**eneffe, George,  
his estate described, 108.
- M**iddlesex,  
plantations small, 53; farms and tithables of, 58.
- M**ilner, Thomas,  
deals in servants, 48.
- M**oseley, Capt. William,  
buys part of *Button's Ridge*, 50, 109.
- M**uir, Francis,  
has 47 slaves, 158.
- M**uscovy Company,  
Baltic trade of, 8; not exempt from customs, 9; urged to trade with America, 11.
- N**ANSEMOND,  
plantations of small, 53; plantations and tithables in, 58.
- N**avigation Acts,  
69; described, 84-86; resented in Holland, 88-89; *Bland's remonstrance against*, 88; cause of war with Holland, 89; cause extreme poverty in Virginia, 90-92; connected with *Bacon's Rebellion*, 92-93; why Virginia Assembly did not protest against, 94-95; Berkeley protests against, 94-95; 98; retard growth of population, 98-99; design of, 116.
- N**ew Albion,  
describes abundance of food in Virginia, 103; advises settlers in Virginia as to clothing, 104.
- N**ew Description of Virginia,  
presents optimistic picture of Virginia, 63; puts price of tobacco at 3d a pound, 66; describes foreign tobacco trade, 69; describes Virginia houses, 104; cites cases of wealth in Virginia, 107.
- N**ew Kent,  
farms and tithables of, 58.
- N**ewport, Capt. Christopher,  
returns to England in 1607, 15; brings iron ore to England in 1607, 17.
- N**ew Jersey,  
manufactures of lure Virginia whites, 141.
- N**icholson, Sir Francis,  
29; 50; orders accurate rent roll in 1690, 51; again attempts rent roll in 1699, 52; completes rent roll, 52; 54; makes rent roll accurate, 55, 97; 114; gives reason for migration from Virginia and Maryland, 140, 141; sues Col. Lawrence Smith for arrears of quit rents, 143; testifies to large land grants, 144.
- N**orfolk,  
plantations of small, 53; farms and tithables of, 58; slave plot in, 129.
- N**orthampton,  
farms and tithables of, 58; 79.
- N**orth Carolina,  
servants flee to, 83.
- N**orthern Neck,  
omitted in rent roll, 50; 54; 55.
- N**orton, Capt. Wm.,  
brings glass workers to Virginia, 19; dies, 19.
- P**AGE, Matthew,  
109.
- P**age, Mann,  
has 157 slaves, 157.
- P**agett, Anthony,  
*Burgess* in 1629, 73.
- P**arke, Daniel,  
109.
- P**atent Rolls,  
in Virginia Land Office, 34; average grants in, 47; show large dealers in

# INDEX

257

- servants, 48; 73; reveal names of freedmen, 74-75.
- Pattison, Thomas,  
landowner, 79.
- Pearson, Christopher,  
inventory of, 107.
- Pelton, George,  
102.
- Pennsylvania,  
manufactures of lure Virginia whites, 191; migration to, 139-146.
- Perfect Description*,  
numbers cattle in Virginia, 101.
- Perry Micajah,  
reports on tobacco trade, 119.
- Plantations,  
Virginia made up of, 29; cheap in Virginia, 29; labor for, 29-37; unhealthy sites for, 39; few large, 43; small hold own with large, 44; small outnumber large, 45; 46; transfers of in Surry county, 46; patents not index to size of, 49; tendency to break up large into small, 49; listed in rent roll of 1704-5, 53, largest in various counties, 53; average size of, 53; accurately listed in rent roll, 55; comparison of number of with workers, 55; number in each county, 58; settlers buy on frontier, 76; part only of each cultivated, 105.
- Popleton, William,  
*Burgess* in 1629, 73.
- Population,  
28; 29; growth of from 1649 to 1675, 98; growth of slow, 99, 142.
- Potash,  
England's need for, 8; found in Virginia, 15; first efforts to produce in Virginia, 17.
- Pott, Dr. John,  
incites people against *Sir John Harvey*, 110.
- Poultry,  
plentiful in Virginia, 102.
- Poverty,  
in England, 31; Navigation Acts cause in Virginia, 91; one cause of *Bacon's Rebellion*, 92-93.
- Present State of Tobacco Plantations*,  
describes tobacco trade to France and Spain, 119; puts tobacco duties at £400,000, 121; describes ill effects of wars on tobacco trade, 148.
- Prince George county,  
plantations and tithables of, 58.
- Princess Anne county,  
plantations of small, 53; 54; farms and tithables of, 58; slave plot in, 129; small slave holders in, 154.
- Public Record Office,  
has copy of rent roll of 1704, 52.
- Q**UARRY, Colonel,  
says wars ruin tobacco trade, 148; 157.
- Quit rents,  
collected by Crown on land, 50; revenue from considerable, 50; 51; often in arrears, 51; roll of in 1704, 51-55.
- R**AMSHAW, William,  
landowning freedman, 75.
- Randall, Robert,  
seven titthables, 57.
- Randolph, Edward,  
remarks on slow growth of Virginia population, 99; says holdings of large tracts of land causes migration from Virginia, 141-143; says quit rents avoided, 142; suggests limiting size of grants, 143.
- Randolph, William,  
imports slaves, 130.
- Rappahannock county,  
land transfers in, 46; landowners of listed as headrights, 76; 79.
- Rent Roll,  
Nickolson orders, 51; attempted in 1699, 52; completed in 1704-5, 52; shows small plantations, 53; accuracy of, 54-55; 5,500 farms listed in, 55; compared with tithables of 1702, 57-58; compared with headrights, 97-99; contains names of few freedmen, 122-123.
- Restoration Period,  
brings suffering to Virginia, 84; 97; 104; 115; 116.
- Rich, Nathaniel,  
buys tobacco at 2s a pound, 64.
- Roberts, Robert,  
buys land, 49.
- Robertson, William,  
makes copy of rent roll of 1704, 52.
- Robins, Sampson,  
79; patents land, 80.
- Robinson, John,  
landowning freedman, 75.
- Rolfe, Capt. John,  
first to cure Virginia tobacco, 24; 25.
- Rooking, William,  
servants and slaves of, 59.
- Rowston, Lionel,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1629, 73; *Burgess* in 1632, 74; landowner, 74.
- Russell, John,  
landowning freedman, 75.
- Russia,  
tobacco trade to, 118-119; 148.
- S**AMUEL, Anthony,  
buys 300 acres, 50.
- Sandys, George,  
selects site for iron works, 17; describes failure of glass works in Virginia, 19; writes for servants, 30; gives wages of laborers, 44.
- Sandys, Eir Edwin,  
expects Virginia to duplicate England, 28.
- Savadge, Thomas,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Scotchmon, Robert,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1632, 74.
- Scott, Thomas,  
has 57 slaves, 158.
- Seruely, Richard,  
patents land, 79.

## INDEX

## Servants,

*London Company* sends to Virginia, 16; Indian children as, 30; system of indentures for, 32; not criminals, 32; political prisoners among, 33; Irish among, 33; *Oliverian* soldiers among, 33; they plot against *Government*, 33; Scotchmen among, 33; *Sedgemoor* prisoners among, 33; chiefly Englishmen, 34, 36; list of preserved, 34; headrights from, 35; influx of, 35; four or five years of service for, 38; become part of Virginia social fabric, 39; hardship and perils encountered by, 39; 80 per cent. become freedmen, 40; prior to 1660 remained in Virginia, 40; length of service for, 40; usually young when freed, 41, 42; estimated at 6,000 in 1671, 41; "seasoned," 42; become small part of population, 43; merchants bring to complete cargoes, 47; individual orders for, 48; in immigrant ships, 48; dealers in, 48; numbers in 1704, 56; listed as tithables, 56; distribution of, 58-59; not slaves, 60; like English apprentices, 60; outfit of on expiration of term, 61; not entitled to land, 61; hope to become landowners, 61-62; Virginia land of opportunity for, 71; freedmen often purchase, 72; of early period become prosperous, 73-80; list of, 78; proportion of among immigrants, 81-82; little hope for advancement of after 1660, 96-100; importation of in Restoration period, 98-99; inventories which show none, 106-107; many freed to fight in *Bacon's Rebellion*, 113; few become landowners at end of 17th century, 112-113; usefulness of as compared with slaves, 126; price of, 127; not always docile, 128; slave labor curtails importation of, 134; England opposes migration of, 135; vast numbers imported, 142.

Seymour, Attorney-General,  
tells Virginians to make tobacco, 136.

Sheep,  
scarce in Virginia, 102.

Sheriff,  
collects quit rents, 51; draws up rent roll, 52; uncards false returns, 54-55.

Sherwood, William,  
calls *Bacon's* men rabble, 93.

Shipbuilding,  
materials for needed in England, 8; lack of injures merchant marine, 9; materials for found in Virginia, 15; *Capt. Smith* explains why Virginia cannot produce materials for, 17.

Shurley, Daniel,  
landowning freedman, 74.

Sickness, The Virginia,  
*Capt. Blewit* dies of, 18; glass workers die of, 19; servants die of, 33; described, 39; terrible mortality from, 39, 80; abates before end of 17th century, 40; not fatal to slaves, 128.

## Silk,

from South Europe, 12; in Virginia, 15.  
Slaughter, John,  
80.

Slave trade,  
in hands of Dutch, 31; restrictions on, 45.

## Slaves,

adequate for tobacco raising, 29; first cargo of in Virginia, 30; few in Virginia prior to 1680, 31; influx of, 40; numbers in 1704, 56; listed as tithables, 56; distribution of, 58-59; inventories show that many planters had none, 106-107; used by wealthy men in 17th century, 108; first cargo of, 124; few prior to 1680, 124; importations of, 124-125; Dutch control trade in, 125-126; fitness for tobacco culture, 126; price of, 127; labor of crude, 127-128; health of good, 128; docile, 128; plots among, 128-129; no wrong seen in, 129; duty on importation of, 129; large importations of, 1680-1708, 130-131; 6,000 by 1700, 130; 12,000 in 1708, 130; 30,000 in 1730, 131; use of cheapens tobacco, 132; use of curtails importation of servants, 134; England favors use of in Virginia, 135-136; pernicious effect of in ancient Rome, 137-139; effect of on Virginia yeomanry, 139-155; causes migration of whites, 139-146; at first produce only lower grades of tobacco, 147; become more efficient, 147; contempt of for poor whites, 152; small holders of, 152-159; cast stigma on labor, 155; large holders of increase in numbers, 155-159.

## Smelting,

wood needed for, 8; in Virginia, 15; machinery for sent to Virginia, 17; begun at *Falling Creek*.

Smith, Capt. John,  
describes Baltic trade, 8; explains difficulty of building up manufacturers in Virginia, 17.

Smither, William,  
buys 200 acres, 50.

Smyth,  
describes poor whites of Virginia, 152, 155.

Spain,  
commerce with, 12; growing domains of, 14; tobacco of used in England, 25, 26; tobacco of excluded from England, 67, 68, 86, 87; tobacco trade to, 119; trade to injured by war, 131.

Spanish Succession, War of,  
103; 115; 119; cuts off tobacco trade to France and Spain, 131; 148.

Sparshott, Edward,  
landowning freedman, 74.

Smith, Lawrence,  
sued for arrears of quit rents, 143.

Sparkes, John,  
landowning freedman, 74.

Spencer, Capt. Robt.,  
servants and slaves of, 59.

- Spencer, Secretary,  
writes of reviving tobacco trade, 115;  
says slaves cheaper labor than whites,  
132.
- Splittimber, John,  
his cattle, 101; inventory of, 106-107.
- Spotsylvania,  
large grants in, 145; poor whites in,  
151; small slave holders of, 153-154;  
land transfers in, 154; large slave hold-  
ers in, 157; 159.
- Spotswood, Alexander,  
says slaves cause over production of  
tobacco, 129; 151; has 60 slaves, 158.
- Storey, John,  
imports negroes, 130.
- Stuarts, second despotism of,  
affects Virginia, 114.
- Stubblefield, George,  
has 42 slaves, 158.
- Surry,  
land transfers in, 46; tithables in, 56.  
58; inventories and wills in, 59; negroes  
plot in, 128.
- Sweden,  
tobacco trade to, 118-119.
- Symonds, Roger,  
granted 100 acres, 81.
- T**ALIAFERRO, Richard,  
has 43 slaves, 158.
- Tenants,  
few in Virginia, 44, 45, 62.
- Thoroughgood, Adam,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1629, 73; *Burgess*  
in 1632, 74; landowner, 75; brother of  
*Sir John Thorouhgood*, 75.
- Tithables,  
those listed as, 56; in Surry, 56-57;  
number of in various counties, 58.
- Tobacco,  
history of Virginia built on, 20, 23;  
Indians revere, 24; first cured in Vir-  
ginia by Rolfe, 24; Virginia suited for,  
24; ready market for, 24; extensively  
used in England, 24; used by James I,  
25; Virginians turn eagerly to culture  
of, 25; send first cargo of to England,  
25; London Company displeased at cul-  
ture of, 25; England reconciled to, 26;  
Virginia's only hope, 26; Crown tries to  
divert Virginia from, 27; cultivation in  
Virginia universal, 27; shapes immigra-  
tion, 29; requires unskilled labor, 29;  
prosperity of freedmen hinges on, 62;  
amount of one man could produce, 63-  
64; over production of in 1640, 63; price  
of prior to 1660, 64-67; account for  
migration of 1618-1623, 64; rich re-  
turns from, 64; restrictions on trade  
of, 67-69; growing of in England pro-  
hibited, 67; tax on, 67; illegal foreign  
trade in, 68-69; reexported from Eng-  
land, 70; Virginia underbids world in,  
70; returns from, 71-72; freight on high,  
72; effect of Navigation Acts on, 85-96;  
foreign trade in prohibited, 85; requires
- world market, 86; planting in England  
prohibited, 87; exports of to Spain, 87;  
reexported, 87; planted in Holland, 88;  
glut in England causes price of to drop,  
89-91; exhausts soil, 105; Charles I  
makes offer for, 110; trade of revives,  
115-116; production of increases, 115-  
116; returns from, 116; reexports of,  
116-120; production of abroad, 117;  
duty on yields crown large revenue,  
121; price of still low at end of 17th  
century, 123; slaves adequate to its  
cultivation, 127-128; wars interfere  
with trade in, 131; slaves cheapen pro-  
duction of, 132; poor whites produce the  
best, 146-147; foreign trade in ruined by  
war, 148-150; advantages of large plan-  
tations for, 156-157.
- Towns,  
few in Virginia, 29.
- Townsend, Richard,  
*Burgess* in 1629, 73.
- Trussell, John,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Turnbull, Robert,  
has 81 slaves, 158.
- U**NDERWOOD, John,  
patents land in *James City*, 77.
- Upton, John,  
landowning freedman, 75.
- V**EGETABLES,  
abundant in Virginia, 102.
- Virginia's Cure*,  
says Burgesses mostly freedmen, 74.
- Virginia Unmasked*,  
describes Virginia houses, 104.
- Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*,  
shows that many freedmen migrated to  
Virginia, 81.
- Virginia Richly Valued*,  
advises emigrants as to outfit, 104.
- W**AGES,  
high in Virginia, 16; 29; 30; low in  
England, 31.
- Wage earners,  
few in Virginia, 44; mostly recently  
freed servants, 44.
- Walker, Robert,  
has 52 slaves, 158.
- Warburton, Thomas,  
patents land in *James City*, 77.
- Warden, Thomas,  
landowner, 79.
- Warwick,  
average plantation of, 53; farms and  
tithables of, 58; 81.
- Washington, Richard,  
deals in servants, 48.
- Watson, John,  
landowning freedman, 75.
- Weaver, Samuel,  
landowning freedman, 75.

## INDEX

- Webster, Roger,  
servant, *Burgess* in 1632, 74.
- Whitlock, Thomas,  
will of, 105-106.
- Williamsburg,  
35; 54.
- Williams, William,  
buys 200 acres, 50.
- Wills,  
throw light on distribution of servants  
and slaves, 59; 73; headrights mentioned  
in, 76.
- Wine,  
prospect for in Virginia, 15.
- Woolens,  
need of potash for, 8; French duty on,  
13.
- Woolrich, William,  
landowning freedman, 74.
- Wormsley, Ralph,  
109; letter to from *Fitzhugh*, 130.
- Wray, Thomas,  
granted 50 acres, 81.
- Y**ATES, William,  
has 55 slaves, 158.
- Yeomanry, largest class in Virginia, 59, 62;  
freemen in, 72-82; 85; desperately  
poor, 90-91; driven to revolt by poverty,  
92-93; no advancement for after 1660,  
97-100; enjoy plentiful food, 101-103;  
often suffer for proper clothing, 103-  
105; *Burgesses* represented interests of,  
109; aid in ejecting Harvey, 110; many  
favor *Parliament* in *Civil War*, 110-111;  
in control from 1652 to 1660, 112; chief  
sufferers from *Navigation Acts*, 113;  
support Bacon in rebellion, 113; struggle  
for political rights, 114; few recruits to  
at end of 17th century, 122; condition  
of at end of 17th century, 123; effect of  
slavery on in ancient Rome, 137-139;  
migration of from Virginia, 139-146;  
produce higher grades of tobacco, 146-  
147; misery of in 1713, 150; many sink  
into poverty, 151-154; many become  
slave holders, 152-159; slaves make less  
industrious, 155; 160.
- Yeardley, Sir George,  
29; instructed to enforce free exchange  
of goods, 65.
- York,  
land transfers in, 46; plantations of  
small, 53; farms and tithables of, 58;  
servants and slaves in, 59; landowners  
of who had been headrights, 76; 79;  
107; 130.
- Young, Richard,  
granted 100 acres, 81.



**DATE DUE**

Demco, Inc. 38-293

CINCINNATI BIBLE COLLEGE & SEM. LIBRARY  
975.02 W499c grad  
Wertenbaker, Thomas/The planters of colo



3 4320 00003 7699

975.02 W499c

Ac. #28205

Wertenbaker, Thomas  
Jefferson.

The planters of colonial  
Virginia

C.M. ELLIOTT LIBRARY  
Cincinnati Bible College & Seminary

975.02 W499c

Ac. #28205

Wertenbaker, Thomas  
Jefferson.

The planters of colonial  
Virginia

